



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

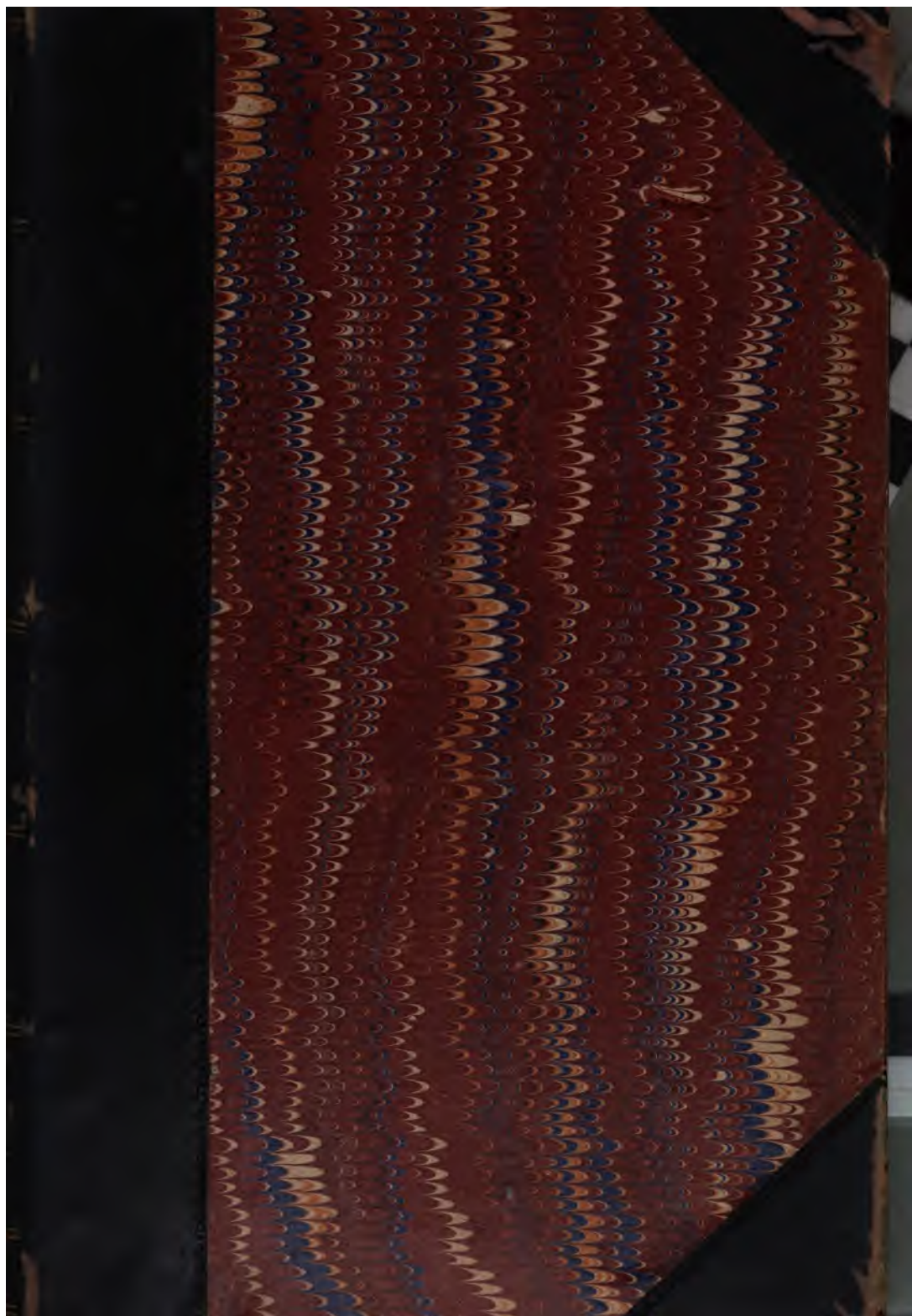
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

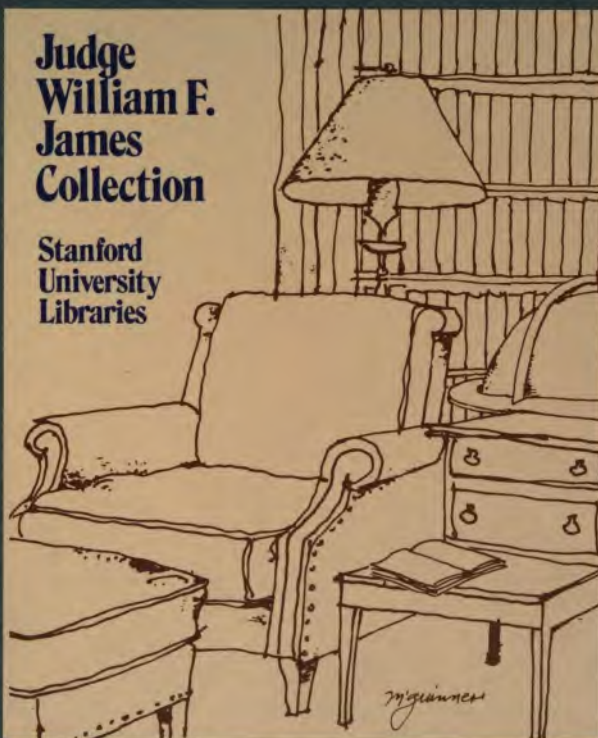
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



**Judge  
William F.  
James  
Collection**

**Stanford  
University  
Libraries**











**SIR JOHN FROISSART'S**  
**CHRONICLES**  
**OF**  
**ENGLAND, FRANCE, SPAIN,**  
**AND THE**  
**ADJOINING COUNTRIES,**  
**FROM THE LATTER PART OF THE REIGN OF EDWARD II.**  
**TO THE CORONATION OF HENRY IV.**

NEWLY TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH EDITIONS,  
WITH VARIATIONS AND ADDITIONS FROM MANY CELEBRATED MSS.

---

---

By **THOMAS JOHNES.**

---

---

Who so shall telle a tale after a mar,  
He mooste reherse, as neighe as eber he can,  
Everich worde, if it be in his charge,  
All speke he never so rudely and so large;  
Or elles he mooste tellen his tale untrewe,  
Or feinen thinges, or finden wordes newe.

CHAUCER'S PROLOGUE.

THE THIRD EDITION.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,  
A LIFE OF THE AUTHOR, AN ESSAY ON HIS WORKS,  
A CRITICISM ON HIS HISTORY,  
AND A DISSERTATION ON HIS POETRY.

VOL. VI.

L O N D O N:

PRINTED FOR LONGMAN, HURST, REES, AND ORME, PATERNOSTER-  
ROW; AND J. WHITE, FLEET-STREET.

1808.

3113

F77

1868

v. 6

THE  
CONTENTS  
OF  
THE SIXTH VOLUME.

---

CHAP. I. THE Earl of Flanders again lays siege to Ghent	Page 1
II. The Earl of Flanders raises the Siege of Ghent.—Two rich Citizens, desirous of negotiating a Peace between the Earl and the Town, are put to Death by Peter Du Bois and Philip Von Artaveld	7
III. An Insurrection in Paris, on Account of the intended Taxes.—The Lord De Coucy appeases it.—The Duke of Anjou makes Preparation for his Journey to Naples	14
IV. The English make an Expedition against the Spaniards, contrary to the Orders of the King of Portugal.—The Castle of Figuiere is taken	20
V. After the Conquest of the Castle of Figuiere, the Canon de Robersac, returning to his Garrison, is in great Danger.—Succours come from France to Castille	26
VI. The Emperor Wincellaus sends his Sister Anne to King Richard of England, who makes her his Queen	30



CHAP. VII. The king of France cannot obtain Money from the Receiver at Paris. —The Duke of Anjou marches into Italy with a noble Attendance of Knights - - - - -	34
VIII. The Earl of Savoy, who had accom- panied the Duke of Anjou to Na- ples, orders a Man to be beheaded, who had boasted that he would give them Possession of the Castel Del Ovo by Enchantment. - - -	40
IX. The Canon de Robersac makes another Excursion contrary to the Will of the King of Portugal, and takes several Places adjoining to Seville -	44
X. The Canon and his Companions gain much Booty from the King of Cas- tille.—They mutiny against the King of Portugal, who orders their Pay to be instantly delivered to them -	49
XI. The Kings of Castille and Portugal as- semble their Forces.—Peace made between them, against the Will of the English - - - - -	59
XII. A Joust between a French Knight and an English Squire.—The Earl of Cambridge leads back his Army to England, with his Son, whose be- trothed Wife, the Infanta of Portu- gal, is afterwards married to the King of Castille - - - - -	64
XIII. Ghent is in great Distress for Provisi- ons. They are succoured by the Inha- bitants of Liege - - - - -	69
CHAP.	

	Page
CHAP. XIV. The Earl of Flanders sends a harsh Answer to those who wished to mediate a Peace between him and Ghent. —The Populace, under the Name of Maillotins, rise again at Paris	77
XV. The Citizens of Ghent, after having heard from Philip Von Artaveld the Terms of Peace which he had brought from the Conferences at Tournay, march out, to the Number of five Thousand, to attack the Earl of Flanders in Bruges	82
XVI. The Order of Battle of the Ghent Men.—They defeat the Earl of Flanders and the Men of Bruges.—The Means by which this was brought about	90
XVII. Bruges is taken by the Ghent Army.—The Earl of Flanders saves himself in the House of a poor Woman	97
XVIII. The Ghent Men spare the foreign Merchants in Bruges.—The Earl of Flanders quits Bruges, and returns to Lille, whither some of his People had already retreated	103
XIX. The Conduct of the Ghent Men at Bruges.—All the Towns in Flanders surrender to them except Oudenarde	109
XX. Philip Von Artaveld, on his Return to Ghent, lives in great Pomp.—The Earl of Flanders resides in Lille	113
XXI. Philip Von Artaveld and the Ghent Men lay siege to Oudenarde	117
CHAP.	

- CHAP. XXII.** A Detachment of the Ghent Army from before Oudenarde, in overrunning the Lands of their Lord, burn some Villages on the Frontiers of France, which causes a War between the King of France and them 120
- XXIII.** The Duke of Burgundy instigates his Nephew King Charles to make War on Ghent and its Allies, as well in revenge for the burnt Villages as to assist in the Recovery of Flanders, for the Earl, who was his Vassal - - - 124
- XXIV.** Charles the Sixth, King of France, from a Dream, chooses a flying Hart for his Device - - - 128
- XXV.** During the Siege of Oudenarde, the Rebels entreat King Charles to make Peace between them and the Earl of Flanders.—The King answers them with Contempt.—They then endeavour to draw the English into an Alliance with them - - - 131
- XXVI.** The Ambassadors from Ghent fail in forming an Alliance with England - 139
- XXVII.** The Messenger which the Ghent Men had sent to King Charles of France is delivered from Prison.—Some Prisoners from Tournay and Courtray are exchanged for each other 141
- XXVIII.** King Charles orders Commissioners to enter into certain Treaties with the Flemings.—Their Messengers are imprisoned at the Moment they demanded Passports - - - 145

	Page
<b>CHAP. XXIX.</b> The Answer of Philip Von Artaveld to the French Commissioners, which he sent by a Prisoner of War from Oudenarde - - - - -	148
<b>XXX.</b> Philip Von Artaveld writes affect- edly civil Letters to Tournay.— The French Commissioners return to the King - - - - -	153
<b>XXXI.</b> King Charles, after hearing the Re- port of his Commissioners, at the Instigation of the Earl of Flanders who was present, assembles his Army in Artois against the Flemings.— Philip Von Artaveld guards the Passes into Flanders - - - - -	156
<b>XXXII.</b> Several Knights of the Party of the Earl of Flanders, having passed Pont- Amenin, are defeated and killed on their Attempt to repass it, the Flem- ings having broken down the Bridge. —Philip, hearing this News when at Ypres, makes Use of it to encour- age the Inhabitants - - - - -	161
<b>XXXIII.</b> The Order of the French Army in its March to Flanders, after they had heard the Bridges were broken and guarded - - - - -	166
<b>XXXIV.</b> Some few of the French, not being able to cross the Lis at the Bridge of Commynes, find Means of doing so, by Boats and other Craft un- known to the Flemings - - - - -	173
<b>XXXV.</b> A small Body of French, having crossed the Lis, draw up in Battle Array before the Flemings - - - - -	180
<b>CHAP.</b>	

- CHAP. XXXVI.** The French who had crossed the  
Lis defeat, with great Slaughter, Pe-  
ter Du Bois and the Flemings.—  
The Van-guard of the French Army  
repair and pass over the Bridge of  
Commines - - - - - 186
- XXXVII.** Philip Von Artaveld takes Measures  
to resist the Force of the King of  
France.—He receives an Answer  
from his Ambassadors in England 195
- XXXVIII.** The King of France crosses the Lis  
at the Bridge of Commines.—The  
Town of Ypres surrenders to him 196
- XXXIX.** The King of France receives Infor-  
mation of a Riot among the Pari-  
sians.—Several Places in Flanders  
surrender to him - - - - - 200
- XL.** The King of France lodges in Ypres.  
—Peter Du Bois prevents Bruges  
from surrendering to the King.—  
Philip Von Artaveld assembles his  
forces to combat the French - 203
- XLI.** Philip Von Artaveld, having enter-  
tained his Captains at Supper, gives  
them Instructions how they are to  
act on the Morrow at the Battle of  
Rosebecque.—Wonderful Appearan-  
ces in the Heavens are seen during  
this Night - - - - - 208



- CHAP. XLII.** King Charles entertains at Supper his Uncles and some others of his principal Barons on the Eve of the Battle of Rosebecque.—The Constable De Clisson is excused from attending the King's Person during the Battle - - - 214
- XLIII.** Philip Von Artaveld and his Flemings quit the strong Position they had taken in the Morning, to encamp on Mont D'Or, near to Ypres.—The Constable and Admiral of France, with the Bastard of Langres, set out to reconnoitre their Situation - - - 218
- XLIV.** The Battle of Rosebecque, between the French and Flemings.—Philip Von Artaveld is slain, and his whole Army defeated - - - 222
- XLV.** The Number of Slain at the Battle of Rosebecque and Pursuit afterwards.—Philip Von Artaveld is hanged after he was dead.—The Siege of Oudenarde is raised.—Peter Du Bois retreats to Ghent.—The King of France fixes his Quarters in the Town of Courtray. - - - 223
- XLVI.** Bruges submits to the King's Mercy.—The Count De Blois guards the Country of Hainault from being pillaged.—The Inhabitants of Ghent gain Courage from Peter Du Bois 234

	Page
<b>CHAP. XLVII. The Treaty between the English and Flemings is broken.—The King of France departs from Flanders</b>	240
<b>XLVIII. Vain Attempts made for Peace between the King of France and Ghent.—The King, on his Return to Paris, orders the Chains to be taken away that barricaded the Streets.—He severely punishes the Parisians</b>	244
<b>XLIX. Several of the principal Citizens of Paris are beheaded with John Des Marets, and many others in the different Towns and Cities in France</b>	253
<b>L. The Ghent Men renew the War.—The Earl of Flanders becomes an Object of Hatred to the English</b>	256
<b>LI. Pope Urban sends Bulls into England for the Destruction of the Clementists.—The Bishop of Norwich appointed Commander in Chief against them</b>	260
<b>LII. The Bishop of Norwich, Commander of the English in the Croisade of Urban against the Clementists, disembarks at Calais with his Army of Urbanists</b>	263

**CHAP.**

- CHAP. LIII.** The Bishop of Norwich, Commander of the Urbanists, enters Flanders contrary to the Opinion of Sir Hugh Calverley.—The Earl of Flanders sends Ambassadors to the Bishop, who returns a harsh Answer 268
- LIV.** The Bishop of Norwich marches towards Dunkirk.—He defeats twelve thousand Flemings and takes the Town - - - 273
- LV.** The English, under the Command of the Bishop of Norwich, having conquered all the Coast from Gravelines to Sluys, lay siege to Ypres - 283
- LVI.** The Men of Ghent assist the English in their Siege of Ypres.—The Lord De St. Leger going to reinforce the Garrison of Courtray, by Orders of the King of France, is defeated by a party of English near Commines - - - 287
- LVII.** The Bishop of Liege, not being able to bring about a Peace between the Bishop of Norwich and the Earl of Flanders, returns home - - 290
- LVIII.** The King of France issues a grand Summons, with the Intention of raising the Siege of Ypres.—Some of the Earl of Flanders' Men are defeated by the English before the Church of Emenin - - 294

- CHAP. LIX.** The English and Ghent Men make a sharp Attack on Ypres; but, learning that the King of France had marched an Army into Artois, they instantly break up the Siege - 297
- LX.** Duke Frederick of Bavaria arrives at the Army of the King of France.—Count Guy Du Blois, notwithstanding his ill Health, comes to Arras attended by his Men at Arms - 302
- LXI.** The Van of the French Army takes Cassel and Trughen. The English abandon Bergues, and retire to Bourbourg, wherein the King of France besieges them - - - 304
- LXII.** Francis Atremen surprises Oudenarde in the Night-time - - - 315
- LXIII.** Aymerigot Marcel, an English Captain on the Borders of Auvergne, takes by Stratagem the Castle of Marquel.—The Countess Dauphine ransoms it for five thousand Francs 320
- LXIV.** The King of France orders Bourbourg to be attacked.—It is surrendered to him by Capitulation, when the English quit Flanders.—He then disbands his Army - - - 324

CHAP.

- CHAP. LXV.** The Bishop of Norwich and those who accompanied him in his Expedition are badly received on their Return to England.—Certain great Personages are deputed to negotiate a Peace or Truce between the Kings of France and England.—The Duke of Bavaria dies - - - 332
- LXVI.** During these Conferences the Ghent Men insult Tournay.—A Truce is concluded between the Kings of France and England and their Allies - - - 336
- LXVII.** The Earl of Flanders dies.—The Ceremony of his Funeral - - - 338
- LXVIII.** The Earls of Northumberland and Nottingham raise a Body of English to make an Excursion into Scotland.—Ambassadors are sent from France to Scotland, to notify the Truces which had been made between France and England - - - 345
- LXIX.** The Barons and Knights of Scotland, in conjunction with some French Knights, undertake an Expedition into England without the Knowledge of the King of Scotland, who sends a Herald to make his Excuses to the King of England - - - 351

**CHAP.**



	Page
<b>CHAP. LXX.</b> The Truces which had been made between the French, the English and their Allies, are proclaimed in Scot- land.—The French Knights, on their Return from Scotland, are in great Danger from the Zealanders -	356
<b>LXXI.</b> The Lord Destournay assembles Forces to retake Oudenarde.—He conquers it by Stratagem - - -	361
<b>LXXII</b> The Duke of Anjou dies at a Castle near Naples.—His Widow is advis- ed to solicit the Pope for the Pos- session of Provence - - -	365
<b>LXXIII.</b> Preparations are made in France for the Renewal of the War with Eng- land.—The Duchess of Brabant suc- ceeds in forming a Marriage between the Children of Burgundy and those of Hainault - - -	368
<b>LXXIV.</b> The King and the Nobles of France and Hainault lay in great Provision of Stores at Cambray.—The Duke of Lancaster sends Ambassadors to the Earl of Hainault.—The Marri- ages of the Children of Burgundy and Hainault are concluded -	374
<b>LXXV.</b> The Duke of Berry betroths his Daugh- ter to the Son of the Count De Blois.—The Duke of Bourbon and the Count De La Marche issue their Summons to invade Limousin	379
<b>CHAP.</b>	

	Page
CHAP. LXXVI. Sir John De Vienne, Admiral of France sails to Scotland, to carry on the War against the English at the Expiration of the Truce	382
LXXVII. The Pillagers of Ghent, surnamed Por- kers, commit much mischief.—Fran- cis Atremen defeats some French Troops near Ardembourg	384



THE  
CHRONICLES  
OF  
*ENGLAND, FRANCE, SPAIN, &c.*

---

CHAP. I.

THE EARL OF FLANDERS AGAIN LAYS SIEGE TO  
GHENT.

**W**HILE the affairs you have heard were passing in England, there was no intermission in the wars which the earl of Flanders was carrying on against Ghent, and which those citizens waged against him.

You know that Philip von Artaveld was chosen commander in Ghent, through the recommendation of Peter du Bois, who advised him, when in office, to become cruel and wicked to be the more feared. Philip did not forget this doctrine, for he had not long been governor of Ghent before he had twelve persons beheaded in his presence: some said, they were those who had been principally concerned in the murder of his father, and thus he revenged himself on them.

Philip von Artaveld began his reign with great power, and made himself beloved and feared by

many, more especially by those who followed the profession of arms: for, to gain their favour, he refused them nothing; every thing was abandoned to them. I may be asked how the Ghent men were able to carry on this war; and I will answer to the best of my ability, according to the information I received. They were firmly united among themselves, and maintained the poor, each according to his means: thus, by being so firmly united, they were of great force: besides, Ghent, taken all together, is one of the strongest towns in the world, provided Brabant, Zealand, and Holland, be not against it; but, in case these countries were leagued with Flanders, they would be shut up, surrounded and starved. These three countries, however, were never their enemies; so that their warfare with the earl of Flanders was more strenuously carried on, and longer continued.

At the commencement of Philip von Artaveld's government, the deacon of the weavers was accused of treason. He was arrested and committed to prison. In order to know the truth of the accusation, his house was searched, wherein was found some saltpetre in powder. The deacon was beheaded, and dragged through the town by the shoulders, for a traitor, and to serve as an example to others.

The earl of Flanders resolved to lay siege again to Ghent: he therefore issued his summons to a number of knights and squires, and to the inhabitants of the principal towns. He sent to Mechlin, from whence he had many men. He wrote  
to



to his cousins, sir Robert, and sir William de Namur at that time count d'Artois, the countess, his mother, being lately dead, who brought a number of knights from Artois. In this summons, the lord de Dampierre was not forgotten: he came to offer his services, with as many as he could collect, and was handsomely attended by knights and squires from Hainault.

The earl advanced to invest Ghent, on the side towards Bruges and Hainault. During the time it lasted, there were many skirmishes; and the Ghent men made frequent sallies in search of adventures, in which sometimes they were repulsed, at others they conquered. But the person who gained the greatest renown was the young lord d'Anghien: all the young knights desirous of glory cheerfully followed his banners.

The lord d'Anghien marched with full four thousand men, well mounted, without counting those on foot, to besiege Grammont, which was attached to Ghent: he had before harrassed them much, but could not win it. This time, however, he came in greater force, and, on a Sunday, had it stormed at upwards of forty places: he did not spare himself, but was one of the most active, and the first who placed his banner on the walls. This attack was so sharp and well fought that, about four in the afternoon, the town was taken, and the troops of the lord d'Anghien entered it through the gates, which had been destroyed.

When the inhabitants saw their town was lost without hope of recovery, all that could escape

did so through those gates where there were no enemies; but few were so fortunate. The slaughter was very great of men, women and children, for to none was shewn mercy. There were upwards of five hundred of the inhabitants killed, and numbers of old people and women burnt in their beds, which was much to be lamented.

The town was set on fire at more than two hundred places, which reduced the whole to ashes, churches and all: nothing remained entire.

Thus did Grammont suffer by fire and flame; and the lord d'Anghien, after this exploit, returned to the army before Ghent. The earl of Flanders was much pleased when he heard it, and said; 'Fair son, you are a valiant man, and, if it please God, will be a gallant knight, for you have made a handsome commencement.'

During this destruction of Grammont, which happened on a Sunday in the month of June, the siege of Ghent still continued. The lord d'Anghien, whose name was Walter, was there, but never rested long in his quarters: he was every day out in search of adventures, at times well accompanied, at others so thinly that he was unable to prosecute his plans. Some adventures, however, daily beset him or the Flaze of Flanders.

One Thursday morning the lord d'Anghien left his quarters, in company with the lord de Montigny, sir Michael de la Hameide his cousin, his brother the bastard d'Anghien, Julien de Toisson, Hutin Donay, and several more of his household, in order to skirmish before Ghent as they had formerly

formerly done: they this time advanced so far that they suffered for it, for those of Ghent had placed in ambuscade more than two hundred men beyond the walls of the town. They were armed with long pikes. Some said, this ambuscade was formed of the greater part of those who had fled from Grammont, in the hope of surrounding and making prisoner the lord d'Anghien, in revenge for the mischief he had done them. They knew him to be young, courageous and apt to venture himself foolishly, which gave them hopes of the success they had. It was unfortunate for him, as well as for those who accompanied him.

The lord d'Anghien and his company were quite off their guard when they found themselves surrounded by the Ghent men, who advanced boldly up, crying out, 'Surrender, or you are all dead men:' The lord d'Anghien, perceiving his situation, asked advice from the lord de Montigny, who was beside him: he replied,—'Sir, it is too late: let us defend ourselves, and sell our lives as dearly as we can: there is nothing else to do, and we have not a moment for delay.'

The knights then made the sign of the cross, and recommending themselves to God and St. George, dashed among their enemies; for they could noways retreat, being in the midst of their ambuscade. They behaved very gallantly, and did every thing that could be done in arms; but they were out-numbered by their opponents, who, having long pikes, gave such strokes as were but too mortal, as the event shewed.

The

The lord d'Anghien was slain; as were the bastard d'Anghien his brother, and Julien de Toisson by his side. Other valiant knights from Hainault, such as the lords de Montigny and de St. Christopher, suffered similar fates. Sir Michael de la Hameide was severely wounded, and would certainly have lost his life, if Hutin Donay had not saved him by dint of arms and prudence: he had great difficulty in doing it.

While the Flemings were employed in pillaging and disarming these knights, to convey them into Ghent, where it was known they had slain the lord d'Anghien, which gave them great joy, Hutin Donay, seeing no hopes of succour, carried Sir Michael de la Hameide out of the crowd and danger. Such was the end of this unfortunate day to the lord d'Anghien. You may well suppose the earl of Flanders was much grieved at it: indeed, he shewed it plainly; for, out of his affection to him, he raised the siege of Ghent. The earl could not forget him, but regretted his loss, saying,—‘Ah, Walter, Walter, my fair son, how unfortunate hast thou been, to be thus cut off in thy youth. I wish every one to know, that the Ghent men shall never have peace with me until I have greatly revenged myself.’

Things remained in this situation, when he sent to demand the body of the lord d'Anghien, which they had carried into Ghent to please the town; but they refused to deliver it up until they should be paid a thousand francs in hard cash. They divided this booty between  
 them,



them, when the body was conveyed to the army, and from thence to Anghien, of which town he was the lord.

---

## CHAP. II.

THE EARL OF FLANDERS RAISES THE SIEGE OF GHENT.—TWO RICH CITIZENS, DESIROUS OF NEGOTIATING A PEACE BETWEEN THE EARL AND THE TOWN, ARE PUT TO DEATH BY PETER DU BOIS AND PHILIP VON ARTAVELD.

OUT of affection to the lord d'Anghien, the siege of Ghent was raised, and the earl returned to Bruges. He then dismissed his army, ordering it to the different garrisons in Flanders, and to the castles of Gavre, Oudenarde, Dendremonde, Courtray, and every place near to Ghent. The earl requested the Liegeois not to continue sending stores and provision to Ghent as they had done.

The men of Liege returned a haughty answer to the messengers, saying they would consult with those of St. Tron, Huy and Dinant, how to act.

The earl sent to his cousins the duke of Brabant and duke Albert, and to the bailiffs of Hainault, Holland and Zealand, special ambassadors, chosen from among his principal counsellors, to remonstrate with them touching the  
conduct

conduct of the town of Ghent, which still continued in its rebellion, chiefly owing to the provision and stores which it received from their countries, and to request that a stop might be put to it.

These two lords would have been very sorry to do any thing which might displease the earl; they excused themselves handsomely, saying, that until that moment they were ignorant of it, but that henceforward they would issue such orders that it should be discontinued. This answer was agreeable to the earl of Flanders.

Duke Albert, who at that time resided in Holland, wrote to his bailiff in Hainault, sir Simon de Lalain, inclosing him a copy of the letter from the earl of Flanders, adding his positive commands against any provision or stores being furnished Ghent from Hainault, or any other thing to be done which might displease his cousin the earl, under pain of his highest displeasure.

The bailiff issued a proclamation through Hainault, forbidding any provisions to be carried to Ghent. A similar proclamation was made in Brabant; so that none dared to go to Ghent but privately, which much surprised the inhabitants; for provision began to be very scarce, and there would have been a famine, if the Hollanders had not assisted them, an act of friendship which they would not be retrained from doing by any injunctions that duke Albert could lay on them.

About this period, through the means of the councils of Brabant, Hainault and Liege, there was a great assembly appointed to be holden at

Harle-

Harlebecque, near Courtray: the men of Ghent sent thither twelve of their principal inhabitants, who had in general shewn themselves desirous of peace, whatever it might cost them from the populace that sought only confusion.

All the magistrates of the chief towns in Flanders were at Harlebecque, even the earl himself; and there were some also from Liege, Hainault and Brabant. Matters were so ably conducted, that the deputies from Ghent returned home with propositions for a peace. It happened that those inhabitants who wished for an end of the war, namely, the prudent and quiet ones, went to the houses of the deputies who had been at this conference, and who were two of the richest and most peaceable citizens, such as sir Guisebert Gente and sir Symon Bete, and asked them what news they had brought. They discovered themselves too soon; for they replied, ‘ Good people, we shall have, if it please God, an excellent peace for those who are well inclined and wish for quiet; and some of the wicked ones in the town will be punished.’

It is commonly said, if there be those who talk, there are those who act. Peter du Bois, not thinking his life in safety, had spies every where to give him intelligence. Some of them brought him the reports of the town, respecting a peace, and assured him the words came from sir Guisebert Gente and sir Symon Bete. Peter, on hearing this, was like a madman, and, applying them to himself, said,—‘ If any are to be punished for this war, I shall not be one of the last;

last; but it shall not go thus. Our gentlemen who have been at the conference may think what they will, but I have no desire to die yet. The war has not lasted half so long as I intend it shall; and my good masters, John Lyon and William Craffort, have not hitherto been sufficiently avenged. If the affairs be now in confusion, I will trouble them still more.'

Peter du Bois was as good as his word, and I will shew how. That same evening, the morrow of which the council were to meet in the council-chamber, to hear the report of the deputies, he came to the house of Philip von Artaveld, and found him musing and thoughtful, leaning against a window of his apartment. The first word he uttered was, 'Philip, have you heard any news?' 'None,' replied Philip, 'except that our deputies are returned from the conference at Harlebecque, and that to-morrow we are to hear in the council-chamber, what they have done.' 'That is true,' answered Peter; 'but I know what they have done, and the terms of the treaty; for they have opened themselves to some of my friends. Be assured, Philip, that our heads will pay for all the treaties they make, or have made; for there will not be any peace between my lord and the town, but that you, the lord de Harzelles, myself, and all the captains our allies in this war, will be first put to death, and the rich citizens pardoned. They wish to free themselves by delivering us up; and this was the opinion of John Lyon, my master. Besides, the earl, our lord, has his base flatterers



flatterers always with him; such as Gilbert Matthew and his brothers, the provost of Harlebecque who is their relation, and the deacon of small crafts who fled away with them. It therefore behoves us to consider awhile on this business.'

'How shall we act?' asked Philip. 'I will tell you,' replied Peter: 'we must send orders to all our leaders and captains, to be ready armed, and in the market-place, to-morrow, and to keep near us; when we will enter the council-chamber, with a hundred of our men, to hear the treaty read. Leave me to manage the rest; but only avow what I shall say; for whoever wishes to preserve his life and power with the commonalty, if he do not make himself feared, does nothing.' Philip willingly assented; and then Peter du Bois, taking his leave, departed. He instantly sent his servants and scouts to the different captains under him, to order them and their men to be in the market-place on the next day, well armed, to hear the news. They all obeyed, for none dared to refuse, and were ready for any mischief.

The ensuing morning, at nine o'clock, the mayor, sheriffs, and rich men of the city, came to the market-place and entered the town-hall: then came those who had been at the conferences at Harlebecque; and last came Peter du Bois and Philip von Artaveld, well attended by those of their party.

When they were all assembled and seated, for every one who chose it sat down, they found the lord de Harzelles was not present: they sent to him,

citizens. Each of them had for his patrimony two thousand francs of yearly revenue. They were much pitied in secret; but no one dared to do so publicly, unless he wished to lose his life.

Things remained in this state, and the war was more bitter than before. The garrisons round Ghent were night and day in the field, so that no provision could enter the town. The Brabanters and Hainaulters were afraid of venturing themselves; for, whenever they were met by the earl's men, the best that could befall them was the slaughter of their horses, sending them prisoners to Dendremonde or to Oudenarde, or making them pay ransom. By these means, the victuallers were afraid to risk bringing supplies to the town.

---

### CHAP. III.

AN INSURRECTION IN PARIS, ON ACCOUNT OF THE INTENDED TAXES.—THE LORD DE COUCY APPEASES IT.—THE DUKE OF ANJOU MAKES PREPARATIONS FOR HIS JOURNEY TO NAPLES.

**A**T this period, the Parisians rose up in rebellion against the king and his council, because they wanted to introduce generally through the kingdom those taxes, impositions and excises which had been raised during the reign of king Charles, father of the present king. The Parisians opposed them, by saying, the king of happy memory had acquitted them from these payments during his lifetime, and that the present king had confirmed this grant at his coronation

nation at Rheims. The young king and his council quitted Paris, and went to reside at Meaux in Brie.

No sooner had the king left Paris than the inhabitants rose, and, having armed themselves, slew all who had been assisting in proposing or collecting these taxes. They broke into the prisons and different houses in the town, taking whatever they could find. They went to the palace of the bishop of Paris, and, having broken open his prisons, set at liberty Hugh Aubriot\*, who had been governor-general of the police during king Charles's reign, and had been condemned to the dungeons for several bad actions which he had done or consented to, many of which were deserving the stake: to this man the mob gave liberty, which he owed solely to their insurrection. He immediately set out from Paris, for fear of being retaken, and went into Burgundy, whence he came, and related to his friends his adventures.

The Parisians, during their rebellion, committed many outrages; but fortunately it was not general: had it been so, affairs would have been bad indeed. The king resided all this time at Meaux, attended by his uncles of Anjou, Berry and Burgundy, who were much

---

\* Hugh Aubriot—had the management of the finances under Charles V. He built the Bastille as a fort against the English. He owed his disgrace and imprisonment to the clergy, who accused him of heresy, &c.: he was shut up between four walls: but the Orleans party hated him because, being a Burgundian, he was attached to the duke of Burgundy.

alarmed

alarmed and vexed at this rebellion. They resolved to fend the lord de Coucy, who was a prudent knight, to treat with and endeavour to appease them; for he knew better how to manage them than any other.

The lord de Coucy, whose name was Enguerand, came to Paris simply attended by his household. He dismounted at his hôtel, and sent for those who had been the most active, and remonstrated with them wisely and prudently on the wickedness of their conduct in killing the officers and ministers of the king, in breaking open his prisons, and setting those who were confined in them at liberty; for all which, if the king willed it, they would dearly pay. But this he was not desirous of doing; for the king much loved the town of Paris, because he had been born in it, and also from its being the capital of his kingdom: he was therefore unwilling to destroy its well-intentioned inhabitants.

He told them, his reasons for coming to Paris were to endeavour to make up matters between them, and that he would entreat the king and his uncles mercifully to pardon them their evil deeds. They answered, that they wished not any harm to the king their lord, nor to make war against him; but that these taxes should be repealed as far as related to Paris: and that, when exempted from such, they would assist the king in any other manner. ‘In what manner?’ demanded the lord de Coucy. ‘We will pay certain sums into the hands of a proper receiver every week, to assist with the other cities and towns in France in the payment of



of the soldiers and men at arms.' 'And what sum are you willing to pay weekly?' Such a sum,' replied the Parisians, 'as we shall agree upon.'

The lord de Coucy managed them so well, by handsome speeches, that they consented to tax themselves, and pay weekly into the hands of a receiver whom they would appoint ten thousand francs. Upon this, the lord de Coucy left them and returned to Meaux in Brie, to lay before the king and his uncles the propositions they had made.

The king was advised to accept this offer of the Parisians, as the best thing he could do; for from this beginning, though small, all the other towns would follow the example, and when times should alter they might then change their measures.

The lord de Coucy returned to Paris, and brought with him the king's pardon to the Parisians, on condition of their observing the propositions they had made. This they promised, and appointed a receiver, to whom was paid, every week, the fixed sum in florins; but it was not to be carried from Paris, except for the payment of those men at arms who should be in actual service, and neither the king nor his uncles were to have any concern with it, nor was it to be otherwise employed.

Affairs remained thus for some little time, and the Parisians were quiet: but the king did not return to Paris, which much displeased the inhabitants.

Rouen likewise was in a state of rebellion, and

from the same cause: the populace rose, killed the king's governor and all those who had any concern in the collecting or valuing these taxes. The king, on hearing this, during his residence at Meaux, was much angered, and his council were doubtful if all the other towns would not follow this example. The king was advised to march to Rouen, which he did, and appeased the commonalty, who were very riotous. He also pardoned them the death of the governor, and whatever else they had done. They appointed a receiver from among themselves, to whom they were to pay a certain sum in florins every week; and, on this being settled, they continued quiet.

Now remark the great evils that were beginning to disturb France: all took rise from the conduct of the men of Ghent; for the common people said every where publicly, they were good men, who so valiantly maintained their liberties, and for which they ought to be loved and honoured by the whole world.

We will return to the duke of Anjou, who had a great desire to visit the kingdom of Naples, of which he signed himself king, as well as of Sicily, and duke of la Puglia and Calabria; for pope Clement had invested him with them, by virtue of the deeds which the queen of Naples had given to him.

The duke of Anjou was prudent, of a warm imagination, bold and enterprising: he plainly perceived, that according to the establishment he had supported hitherto; and which he would have been sorry to have seen lessened, he would  
be

be a poor lord in France, unless he should conquer such rich and noble heritages as the two kingdoms of Naples and Sicily, and the duchies of la Puglia, Calabria, as well as the county of Provence. They would come to him very opportunely; for those counties, of which he called himself lord by virtue of the gift made him, abounded in all sorts of wealth. He was therefore occupied day and night in devising means to perform this journey: he well knew he could never accomplish it without a large sum of money, and a numerous body of men at arms to resist those who might wish to oppose him. The duke, in consequence, amassed so great a quantity of money, under pretence of this journey, that it was marvellous to behold; and he kept the Parisians in as good humour as he could, for he knew there were in Paris large deposits of cash, of which he got the greater part, and sent it to the earl of Savoy, in whom he had great confidence; adding, that on his arrival in Savoy, he would make arrangements by which there should be regular payments for a thousand spears, or more, for one whole year.

The earl of Savoy was much pleased at this intelligence, for he greatly loved arms: he therefore replied to the messengers, that he would willingly serve the duke on the terms proposed. This answer was highly agreeable to the duke, as he had an affection for the company of the earl of Savoy.

The duke retained men in all parts, so that he had collected full nine thousand men at arms,

ready prepared and under his obedience. He ordered the most sumptuous equipages to be made for him and his household at Paris that any lord had ever commanded, such as tents, pavilions and other things suitable for a king when about to make a long journey.

We will now leave the duke of Anjou, and speak of the earl of Cambridge and his men, who were in Portugal near the king's person.

---

#### CHAP. IV.

THE ENGLISH MAKE AN EXPEDITION AGAINST THE SPANIARDS, CONTRARY TO THE ORDERS OF THE KING OF PORTUGAL.—THE CASTLE OF FIGHIERE \* IS TAKEN.

THE earl of Cambridge and his army remained for a considerable time with the king of Portugal at Lisbon; during which the English and Gascons reconnoitred the country, for they had never before been there. It seems to me, that about this time a marriage was agreed on between the daughter of the king of Portugal, who was ten years old, and the son of the earl of Cambridge, of the same age. He was a fine child, and his name was John; the lady's name Beatrice.

There were great feasts at the betrothing of these two children, and much joy; all the barons and prelates of the realm were present; and, young as

---

\* must probably mean Figueiro dos Vinhos, a town in  
 122, for Figuera is in Catalonia.



the married couple were, they were both laid in the same bed. This marriage and the consequent feasts being over, which lasted for eight days, the council of Portugal ordered the men at arms who were in Lisbon to march to other quarters on the frontiers. The earl of Cambridge and a part of his army were sent into quarters at a very handsome town in Portugal called Estremoure\*, and the remainder of the English and Gascons to Besiouse†. John of Cambridge remained with the king.

When the canon de Roberfac, and the English and Gascon knights, took leave of the king, he said to them,—‘My friends, I order you not to make any attacks on the enemy without my knowledge; for, if you do, I shall be much angered.’ They swore, ‘they would not, by God, and, whenever they had such an inclination, would send to inform him, and have his permission.’

They then departed and marched towards Besiouse, which is situated in the upper part of the country, two days journey from Lisbon and as many from Seville, where the king of Spain resided.

The king of Spain had been early informed of the arrival of the English under the command of the earl of Cambridge, and had sent intelligence of it to those knights in France, on whose services

---

\* Estremoure. Q. if not Estremoz.

† Besiouse. Q. if not Villa Viciosa, a town near Estremoz; for D. Sauvage, in a marginal note, says la Salle calls it Vesiousse, which seems a corruption of Viciosa, and confirms me it must be Villa Viciosa.

he depended. On hearing this, and that there were expectations of war in Spain, they were much rejoiced: many who wished to advance their fame made ready, and took the road thither.

The canon de Roberfac\*, who was with his English and Gascon companions in Besiouse, one day said; 'My dear gentlemen, I think we remain here not much to our honour, when we have never as yet made any attempt on our enemies; they will not think the better of us for it. If you will take my advice, let us send to entreat the king to allow us to attack them.' They all replied, 'We are perfectly willing to do so.'

Sir John Canbouicht† was ordered to carry this message, which he cheerfully undertook. He came to the king at Lisbon, where he punctually delivered his message. The king replied, he was unwilling for them to undertake any expedition; and, whatever the knight might urge he could never make him change his opinion. He returned, therefore, to his friends, telling them the king would not comply with their request. They were much enraged at it, and said among themselves, that it was not becoming men at arms to continue so long in garrison without attempting some feats of arms; they mutually agreed to make an excursion. In consequence, they took

---

\* The canon de Roberfac's name was Theodore. He was governor of Arras in the 45th of Edward III. and, in the 3d of Richard II. was employed by the king to treat with the *salliers* concerning his homage. *Cartes Rolles François*, quich. Q.

the field with full four hundred men at arms and as many archers. They resolved to attack a large town which belonged to the commander of St. James; but, on their march, they found a nearer way to arrive at the castle of Fighiere, in which were about sixty Spanish men at arms in garrison, under the command of Peter Gouffes and his brother.

The canon de Roberfac, being very proud of this expedition, as it had been by his means undertaken, rode forward in front. There were sir Oliver Beauchamp, sir Mathew Gournay, Miles Windfor, the lord Talbot, sir Adam Symon, sir John Sounder, bastard brother to the king of England, the souldich de l'Estrade, the lord de Châteauneuf, the lord de la Barde, Raymond de Masson and several more. They arrived at the castle of Fighiere, which they surrounded, and drew up in order of assault, making all preparations necessary for it.

When the garrison saw they were to be attacked, they also made ready for their defence. About four o'clock in the morning, a very vigorous attack commenced, and the English entered the ditch, which being dry, they advanced close to the walls, bracing their targets over their heads, to guard themselves from the stones which might be thrown on them from the walls, and there made good use of their pick-axes and iron crows: while thus employed, the garrison threw on them beams and bars of iron, that wounded many.

The canon de Roberfac was present: he had the courage of a knight, and performed that day  
many

many gallant deeds; as did also Esperons his valet. The archers of England were drawn up on the ditches, who shot so well and rapidly that scarcely any dared to shew themselves on the battlements; and one half of the garrison were either slain or wounded.

The brother of Peter Gouffes, the governor of the castle, was there slain by an arrow; he was called Bartholomew, and was an able and expert man at arms; but, through his own imprudence and rashness, he lost his life.

The assault continued from four o'clock until high noon; and I must say that the English and Gascon knights did not spare themselves, but fought with courage and a thorough good will, because they had undertaken this expedition without the consent of the king of Portugal: they were, therefore, determined to conquer this castle, that the fame of it might reach Lisbon, and shew what success they had met with on their first attempt.

The canon de Roberfac said,—‘Ha, ha, my gentlemen, we shall this day win the castle; but if so many gallant men at arms as we are, take as much time to conquer all the other towns in Spain and in Galicia, we shall never be masters of them.’

The knights and squires, on hearing this speech, began to exert themselves the more: the canon de Roberfac, although covered by his shield, received such a blow that he was much wounded.

There was present a young knight from Hainault called Froissart Meulier, who very gallantly



lantly behaved himself at this assault, as indeed did the others.

The garrison artillery, as well as the machines for casting of stones and iron bars, began to tire and grow weaker in the castle. Considering that of twenty-five men\* (the force within the place), there were not three unhurt, and some dangerously wounded, they could not prevent it from being taken by storm. The brother of their captain lay dead, from whom no further help could come. They resolved to give themselves a little respite, and during that time treat for a peace. They made a signal to parley with the English. The assault was stopped, and those who were in the ditches employed against the walls were ordered out: it was high time, for there were many who had been wounded, and others much fatigued.

Sir Matthew Gournay, constable, and Sir William Windfor, marshal of the army, advanced, and demanded what they wanted. The governor, Peter Gouffes, addressed them in these words,—‘You are resolved not to leave this place without conquering it: you wound our men, and we do the same to yours. We have therefore consulted together; and I, as governor, speak their sentiments, which are, that we will surrender to you the fort, our lives and fortunes being spared. Accept, therefore, these terms, which are just: you are at present the strongest, so that we must submit.’

---

\* Page 23, it is said the garrison consisted of about sixty men at arms.

The English knights replied, they would advise upon it, which they did. When they had held a council, they sent for answer to the garrison, that those within the castle might retire whither they pleased; but the stores must be left behind, and they were not to carry away any thing with them.

When Peter Gouffes saw he could not obtain better terms, he consented, but it was much against his will. Thus was the castle of Figliere surrendered to the English. The Spaniards marched away, under a safe conduct, to Esteris, where the commander of St. James usually resided. They, however, did not find him there; for, having learnt that the enemy had taken the field, he had done the same with full four hundred men at arms, Spaniards and Castilians, in hopes, if he could meet with the English in a favourable situation, to combat them to his honour.

## CHAP. V.

AFTER THE CONQUEST OF THE CASTLE OF FIGHIERE, THE CANON DE ROBERSAC, RETURNING TO HIS GARRISON, IS IN GREAT DANGER.—SUCCOURS COME FROM FRANCE TO CASTILLE.

WHEN the knights of England and the canon had got possession of the castle of Figliere, they were much rejoiced. They had  
it

it repaired in every part: and leaving forty men at arms as a garrison, they stored it well with provisions and other necessaries, and also with a sufficient body of archers. Having placed a good captain as governor, they held a council, when they resolved to return to their quarters.

The English and Gascons, on their departure, divided themselves into three bodies; the last of which remained in the plain, under the command of the canon. Some English, Gascons, and Germans, desirous of feats of arms, had continued with him: in all about sixty spears and as many archers: they marched one whole day with the canon's company on their return to Besioufe.

On the second day, early in the morning, they discovered some ambuscades, and marched on in good array. They were then between a large town in Portugal, called Huenca\*, and the castle of Concrelet†. On the outskirts of a wood, nearer to the castle of Concrelet than to Huenca, was the grand master of St. James‡ posted with full four hundred men at arms. The English no sooner perceived them than they closed their ranks, shewed no signs of fear, and marched on at a good pace.

The Spaniards, notwithstanding their num-

---

\* Huenca. Q. † Concrelet. Q.

‡ I suspect it must have been the grand master of the order of Alcantara, and not of St. James, and that there must have been a castle of Fighiere in the province of Esfremadura; for it is not possible, from the shortness of their march, they could have gone to Catalonia. See note, p. 20.

bers,



bers, made not any appearance of quitting their ambuscade; for they imagined the English had near at hand their large battalion, and for that reason were afraid to attack them: had they been better informed, there would have been a combat. They thus separated from each other without any thing being done.

The Spaniards returned that evening to Esteris, and the canon to Besioufe, when he related to his companions how he had seen the Spaniards in ambuscade between Huenca and Concrelet; adding, 'If we had been all together, we could have fought with them.' The knights, therefore, much repented that they had not kept all in one body.

Thus ended this excursion of the English and Gascons; and when news was brought of it to the king of Portugal, he pretended to be much enraged, because they had done it without his consent. The English and Gascons remained the whole winter in their garrisons, without performing any thing worth mentioning, which wearied them much: it was not their fault no deeds of arms were done.

Don John of Castille, however, was not idle in making his preparations. He had sent to the king of France and to his uncles for succour, and had informed them of the arrival of the earl of Cambridge in Portugal. He also said, that it was universally reported throughout Castille and Portugal that the king of England, the duke of Lancaster, and the earl of Buckingham, with



with a powerful force, were to reinforce them the ensuing summer. For which reasons, he required from the king, in conformity with the treaties between France and Spain, and their mutual affection, that sufficient forces should be sent to him in the course of the spring and summer, to enable him to oppose his enemies with effect. The king's council assented to this, for they clearly saw the king of Spain had a right to demand it. Permission was granted to all knights and squires desirous of advancing themselves to join don John : and the king of France lent them wherewith to perform their journey. It seems to me, that sir Oliver du Guesclin, brother to the late constable of France, made preparations to go thither in the spring. Many knights and squires from Brittany, Beauce, Picardy, Anjou, Berry, Blois and Maine did so likewise, and went thither in companies to perform the journey more comfortably. A passage was open to them through Arragon, and all kinds of provision were prepared for them, for ready money. But you must know they did not pay for all they took in the low countries, which made the poor inhabitants suffer great losses.

## CHAP. VI.

THE EMPEROR WINCESLAUS SENDS HIS SISTER  
ANNE TO KING RICHARD OF ENGLAND, WHO  
MAKES HER HIS QUEEN.

**Y**OU have heard how king Richard of England had for upwards of a year been in treaty with Wincefflaus king of Bohemia, who at this period had taken the title of emperor of Rome, to obtain his sister the lady Anne in marriage ; and how one of his knights, sir Simon Burnley, had much laboured in this business ; and also that the duke of Saxony had been in England to confirm the marriage.

This affair had been so well conducted that the emperor sent his sister to England, attended by the duke of Saxony and great numbers of knights and damsels, with a suitable state becoming such a lady. They came through Brabant to Brussels, where the duke and duchess received the young queen and her company very grandly ; for the duke was her uncle, she being the daughter of the emperor Charles his brother. The lady Anne of Bohemia remained with her uncle and aunt at Brussels upwards of a month. She was afraid of moving, for she had been informed there were twelve large armed vessels, full of Normans, on the sea between Calais and Holland, that seized and pillaged all that fell into their hands and it was indifferent to them who they were, as the report was current, that they cruized

ed in those seas waiting for the coming of this lady; and that the king of France and his council were desirous of carrying her off, in order to break the match, for they were very uneasy at this alliance of the Germans with the English. When it was said to be dishonourable to carry off ladies in the wars of men, they replied,—‘How, have you not seen the prince of Wales, father to the present king of England, consent to a similar action in the person of the duchess of Bourbon, mother to the queen of France, when she was made prisoner by the foldiers of the prince, shut up in the castle of Belleperche, and afterwards conducted into Guyenne and ransomed? If, therefore, to revenge themselves, the French should commit such an act on the intended queen of England, they ought not to be blamed for it.’ On account of these suspicions and fears, the young lady remained in Brussels one whole month. The duke of Brabant, by advice of his council, sent to France the lords de Rousselans and de Bousquehoir, to remonstrate on this subject with the king and his uncles, who were also his nephews, being his sister’s sons.

The knights of Brabant managed so well with the king and his council that their request was complied with, and passports granted for the lady and her attendants to travel through any parts of France she might choose, as far as Calais. The Normans were remanded into port. This answer the knights carried to Brabant to the duke and duchess. The king and his uncles  
wrote

wrote to say, they had granted this favour to their cousin the lady Anne, at their solicitation alone, and for no other reason whatever.

Such information was very pleasing to the duke and duchess of Brabant, as well as to those who were to cross the sea. Preparations were immediately made for their departure from Brussels; and the young lady took leave of her uncle, her aunt, and the ladies and damsels of the country who had accompanied her.

The duke had her escorted with one hundred spears. She passed through Ghent, where she reposed herself for a day, and the citizens did every thing in their power to shew her honour. She then came to Bruges, where the earl of Flanders received her very magnificently, and stopped for three days. She continued her journey until she came to Gravelines, where the earls of Salisbury and Devonshire were waiting for her, with five hundred spears and as many archers. They conducted her to Calais, when the Brabanters returned, after they had delivered her to the barons of England.

The young lady made no stay at Calais but until the wind became favourable. She embarked on a Wednesday morning when the vessels were manned, and the same day arrived at Dover, where she halted to repose herself two days: on the third, she set out for Canterbury, where the earl of Buckingham received her very grandly. The lady pursued her journey unto London, and was most honourably received by the citizens, the ladies and damsels



damfels of the town and country, who were all affembled to meet her. She was married to the king, in the chapel of the palace of Weftminfter, the twentieth day after Chriftnas. On the wedding day, there were great feaftings. That gallant and noble knight fir Robert de Namur had always accompanied her, from the time ſhe quitted Germany until ſhe was married, for which the emperor and king of England held themſelves much obliged.

The king carried his queen to Windfor, where he kept an open and noble houſe. They were very happy together. She was accompanied by the princeſs of Wales and the duchefs of Britanny, aunt to the king, who at that time was ſeparated from the duke her huſband; for the barons and council of England would not conſent to her return into Brittany, becauſe he had changed to the French intereſt.

The barons and knights were accuſtomed to ſay,— ‘ Since the duke of Brittany has ſo ill and ſo treacherouſly acquitted himſelf to the earl of Buckingham, and to our men, the laſt time they were in France, whenever he ſhall demand back his duchefs, let us not conſent to it, but ſend him his two enemies, John and Guy of Brittany, children to St. Charles de Blois, and who have a better right to the duchy than himſelf: he is duke through our power, and an ungrateful return does he make for what he has had from us: we ought therefore to act in like manner to him, for his diſgraceful conduct.’ True it is, that theſe two lords, John

and Guy de Bretagne, sons of St. Charles of Blois, who were prisoners in England, and confined in a strong castle, under the guard of sir Peter d'Ambreticourt, were sent for, and brought before the council of the king of England; when they were informed, that if they would hold the duchy of Brittany from England, and acknowledge it by doing homage to the king, their inheritance should be recovered for them, and John should have the lady Philippa of Lancaster to wife.

But they replied, they would not have any thing to do with it, and would prefer remaining in prison until death to acting otherwise than as good Frenchmen. Affairs continued on this footing, and they were never afterwards in any way spoken to on the subject, since they had shewn the firmness of their intentions.

---

## CHAP. VII.

THE KING OF FRANCE CANNOT OBTAIN MONEY FROM THE RECEIVER AT PARIS.—THE DUKE OF ANJOU MARCHES UNTO ITALY WITH A NOBLE ATTENDANCE OF KNIGHTS.

**Y**OU have before heard how Paris had made its peace with the king, on its agreement of paying a certain sum of florins. The florins were paid weekly to a receiver whom they had appointed, but none came to the coffers of the king, nor were any of them sent out of Paris.

It

It happened that the king was in great want of money to pay the men at arms he was sending to Castille which by treaty he was bound to do.

He ordered the receiver at Paris to prepare a sum of one hundred thousand francs; for he was anxious to assist, in his necessity, don John of Castille, and clearly shewed for what use he intended this money. The receiver replied to the letters from the king, and to those who had brought them, in a very civil manner, saying, that in truth he had money sufficient, but that he could not pay any of it without the consent and permission of the town of Paris. These words did not please the king, who declared he would remedy all this as soon as he should be able. He found the money elsewhere, through the assistance of the principal towns in Picardy.

This caused a great coolness between the king and the Parisians. He never came to Paris, but resided at Meaux, Senlis, Compeigne, and in those parts, to the great displeasure of the Parisians. The greatest resource they had was in the duke of Anjou for their safety: he already signed himself king of Sicily and Jerusalem, and had borne the arms.

The duke commonly resided at Paris, because there was much money kept there, and to prevent the king from receiving any of it, that he might be the better supplied for his projected enterprise in Italy he was collecting money from all parts, and it was said the sum he had at Roquemaure\*, near Avignon, was not less than two

---

\* Roquemaure,—two leagues from Avignon.

millions of florins. He treated with the Parisians, and used such fine language, having words at command, and besides being from his birth the regent of the kingdom, as the eldest of the king's uncles, that he obtained one hundred thousand florins, when the king and his two uncles of Berry and Burgundy could not procure one penny from them.

The duke of Anjou, having now finished his preparations and collected all his stores, began his march early in spring, and the magnitude of his array surprised every one. He passed through France to Avignon, where he was much feasted by the pope and cardinals. The barons and principal lords of Provence came thither to wait on him as their lord, did him homage, and put themselves under his obedience.

The gallant earl of Savoy, his cousin, came to meet him, attended by barons and knights, who were also well received by the pope and cardinals. During his stay at Avignon, he arranged and settled the pay and stores for the Savoyards, who were in considerable numbers, and delivered the money to the earl of Savoy. This being done, the duke of Anjou and the earl of Savoy took their leave of the pope, and set off from Avignon, following the road to Savoy and Piedmont. The earl was the duke's conductor, and paid him the utmost respect in all the great towns through which they passed. Men at arms were continually advancing, or followed in their rear that Lombardy was quite open and ready to give them.

On the duke's entrance into Lombardy, he was most



most honourably received in all the principal towns, more especially in Milan, where sir Galeas and sir Bernabo Visconti loaded him with honours: he received from them such rich presents and jewels as would astonish, if related. The duke of Anjou kept a kingly state: he had his mint with him, where he coined florins and white money, with which he made his payments all through Lombardy and Tuscany.

When they began to approach Rome, they marched in a more compact body than they had hitherto done; for the Romans, being informed of the duke's march, had thrown up strong fortifications to oppose him. They had for commander a valiant English knight, called sir John Hawkwood\*, who had resided a long time in that part of Italy: he was well acquainted with the frontiers, and had under him a large body of men at arms, of Germans, English and other nations in the pay of the Romans, for the defence of Urban, at that time called pope, and who resided at Rome.

This pope was not alarmed at the arrival of the duke of Anjou. When they told him he was on his march, attended by the earl of Savoy and the count of Geneva, with full nine thousand lances of good men at arms, and that it was uncertain if he would not come to Rome to dethrone him, for they were all Clementines, he replied by saying, 'CHRISTUS protegat nos.' That was all the

---

\* Sir John Hawkwood. See his life in Nichol's Bib. Top. Brit.  
alarm

they gave him and the only answer he made to those who spoke to him on the subject.

The duke of Anjou, who titled himself king of Naples, Sicily and Jerufalem, duke of Calabria and la Puglia, accompanied by the earl of Savoy, continued the march of his army through Tuscany, the territory of Ancona, and the patrimony of St. Peter, but did not enter Rome; for the duke wished not to make war on Rome, nor on the Romans, but solely aimed to accomplish his enterprize on the terms according to which he had left France. He kept up kingly state wherever he passed, and all men at arms praised him for the punctuality of his payments.

At this period his adversary, the lord Charles de Durazzo, resided in the city of Naples. He also signed himself king of Naples, Sicily and Jerufalem, duke of la Puglia and Calabria, and considered himself as the lawful king, since the queen of Naples was dead without leaving any heirs by marriage. He looked on the gift which the queen had made to the pope as null, and maintained this opinion by two arguments: the first was, that besides being supported and obeyed by the Neapolitans and Sicilians, the queen of Naples could not resign the inheritance of another; secondly, that supposing this resignation to have been good and the gift in force to the court of Rome, and that the popes were entitled to it, she had not legally done it, for those kings considered Urban as the true pope, and Clement.

This

This is the question which they disputed, and the defence Charles de Durazzo made. He also at the beginning took very wise precautions, for he amply provided with stores the castel del Ovo, which is one of the strongest castles in the world, and situated as it were by enchantment in the sea, so that it is impossible to take it but by necromancy or by the help of the devil\*.

When he had provided this castle with a sufficiency to last three or four years, he collected a body of men at arms and threw himself into it, having made all the entrances very secure, leaving the duke of Anjou to act as he pleased. He well knew the Neapolitans would never desert him, and that, if la Puglia and Calabria should be lost for two or three years, they could easily regain it.

He expected the duke of Anjou would soon find himself at the end of his resources in maintaining such a large army as he had brought, and which it was impossible for him to continue to support. They would be in want of provision or pay, which would tire them out in the course of two or three years; and, when they should be well worn down, he might combat them to his advantage. Charles de Durazzo was full of these ideas, some of which were afterwards realized. In truth, no prince in Christendom, except the kings of France or England, would have been able to have kept up such an immense force as the duke of Anjou did; for they reported he had brought over the mountains

---

\* Denys Sauvage adds a marginal note, that 'if the good man Froissart believes this, his mind must be very simple.'

thirty thousand combatants, without hurting his finances: and the undertaking such an enterprise required much thought and consideration.

---

## CHAP. VIII.

THE EARL OF SAVOY, WHO HAD ACCOMPANIED THE DUKE OF ANJOU TO NAPLES, ORDERS A MAN TO BE BEHEADED, WHO HAD BOASTED THAT HE WOULD GIVE THEM POSSESSION OF THE CASTEL DEL OVO BY ENCHANTMENT.

WHEN the duke of Anjou and his army entered la Puglia and Calabria, the whole country was their own, and the people testified that they wished not for any other lord than him: in a short time, all the barons, principal towns and others, put themselves under his obedience. Those who have been in these countries, which are the richest in the world, report, that from the great abundance of every thing, the people are perfectly indolent, and do no manner of labour.

The men at arms, on entering so rich a country, felt themselves very comfortable; but the duke of Anjou, the earl of Savoy, the count of Vendôme, the count of Geneva\*, and all the knighthood of France, Savoy and Brittany, marched on into the territories of Naples.

---

mt of Geneva. Giannone says, he was brother to pope



The citizens of Naples, not fearing these men at arms, deigned not to shut their gates, but kept them always open, as they never imagined the duke of Anjou could reside there longer than it was agreeable to them; for the moment they should be inclosed in the town, whatever numbers they might be, they would be lost, as the houses were not easy to be taken, having before their doors planks which may be removed, and the sea underneath, on which they would not perhaps like to adventure themselves.

An enchanter, master of necromancy, who had resided for some time in the Neapolitan territory, came to the duke of Anjou, and said,—‘My lord, if you will, I can cause the castle del Ovo and its garrison to surrender to you,’ ‘How can that be?’ replied the duke. ‘My lord, I will tell you,’ answered the enchanter: ‘I can, by enchantment, make the air so thick over the sea, that those in the castle shall think it a large bridge, on which ten men may march in front: and, when they shall see this bridge, they will be so frightened they will surrender themselves to you, lest, if you attack them, they be taken by storm.’ The duke, much astonished at what he had heard called his knights, the count de Vendôme, the count de Genève, sir John and sir Peter de Bueil, sir Morice de Maumi and others, to whom he related what the enchanter had just told him. They were very much surprised, but seemed willing to give him faith for it.

The duke then asked,—‘Fair master, can our people march on this bridge of which you speak

as far as the castle, and attack it?' 'My lord,' replied the magician, 'of this I dare not assure you; for if any one of them, while on this bridge, should make the sign of the cross, all would disappear, and those on it would fall into the sea.' The duke, upon this, began to laugh, and some of the young knights present said,—'Ha, my lord, for God's sake, let him do it: we will not make any sign of the cross, and by this means we shall easily capture our enemies.' The duke said he would consider of it.

The earl of Savoy was not present at this conversation, but came soon afterwards. When the earl entered the duke's tent, the magician had just left it; but the duke told him all that had passed, and what offers he had made. The earl, having mused a while, said, 'Send him to my quarters, and I will examine him. He is that master magician by whose means the queen of Naples and sir Otho de Brunswick were taken in the castle del Ovo, for he caused the sea to swell so high that it seemed as if it would swallow the castle: those within it were so much frightened they looked on themselves as dead. One ought never to put too great a confidence in such people; for you see the wickedness of the wretches in this country: in order to please you, and to obtain your benefactions, he will betray Charles de Dufazzo, to whom he formerly gave up the queen of Naples and her husband.'

'Well,' replied the duke, 'I will send him to you.' The conversation took another turn, and,  
after

after they had well considered their situation, the earl returned to his quarters.

On the morrow morning, when the lords were risen, the magician waited on the duke, bowing most lowly. As soon as the duke perceived him, he ordered a valet to conduct him to the earl of Savoy. The valet, taking his hand, said, 'Master, my lord's will is, that you go to the earl of Savoy.' He answered, 'God's will be done.' When arrived at the tent of the earl, the valet said, 'My lord, here is the doctor whom my lord sends to you.' The earl was much pleased on seeing him, and said, 'Doctor, do you assure us for a certainty, that you will gain us the castel del Ovo at so cheap a rate?' 'Yes, by my troth, my lord,' replied the enchanter, 'for by a similar trick I got it for him who is now within it, namely the lord Charles de Durazzo, from the queen of Naples, her daughter and husband sir Robert d'Artois\* and sir Otho de Brunswick. I am the man in the world of whom the lord Charles has the greatest dread.'

'By my faith,' replied the earl, 'you speak well; but I wish the lord Charles to know, that he is in the wrong to fear you so much, for I will make him easy on that head: you shall not hence-

---

\* Robert d'Artois. Denys Sauvage, in his 24th annotation, says,—The history of Naples often speaks of this Robert d'Artois, making him the husband of Mary, daughter to Joan queen of Naples; but no mention whatever is made of these enchantments. They seem to come from the romances of Morgante and Urganda; so that I am surpris'd Froissart could suffer himself to be thus deceived, and wish to deceive posterity.'



forward perform any enchantment to deceive him or any one else. I will not have it reproached to us in times to come, that such knights and squires and valiant men at arms here assembled should have been obliged for our success to magic, nor do we desire to conquer our enemies by such means.' He then ordered a servant to call the headsmen, and have his head struck off. The earl's commands were instantly obeyed, and his head was cut off on the outside of the tent. Such was the end of this enchanter, and such his recompense.

We will now leave the duke of Anjou, his army and his marches, and return to the affairs of Portugal, and relate how the English and Gascons prospered.

---

## CHAP. XI.

THE CANON DE ROBERSAC MAKES ANOTHER EXCURSION CONTRARY TO THE WILL OF THE KING OF PORTUGAL, AND TAKES SEVERAL PLACES ADJOINING TO SEVILLE.

**T**HE knights in garrison at Besiouse, and who had been there for so considerable a time, having made but one excursion, when they took the Castle of Figuiere, resolved, about the middle of April, to make another: for they were very much surpris'd at the conduct of the king of Portugal

Portugal and earl of Cambridge, who had let them remain idle the nine months they had now been in Portugal, without having formed any expedition but the one for which they had been blamed.

They determined to send to and remonstrate with the earl of Cambridge on this subject: I believe the envoy was the souldich de la Trane. He came to Estremoz, where the earl was quartered, and said to him,—‘My lord, my companions send me to you, to know what you would wish them to do; for they much wonder why they have been brought to this country, to remain so long in indolence, which displeases them much. You will let me know what you would have them do, for they are very desirous of making an excursion.’

‘Souldich,’ replied the earl, ‘you know, that when I left England, my lord and brother the duke of Lancaster promised me, on his faith, that on his return from Scotland, whither he was then going, he would join us with men at arms, to the amount of three thousand, and as many archers. Upon this engagement, I came merely to reconnoitre the country. In a short time we shall have intelligence from him; for it is equally unpleasant to me to have remained so long in this country. You will therefore salute your companions in my name, and tell them what I have just said to you. I cannot wish to prevent them from making an excursion, since they have such an inclination for it; but you know the king of Portugal gives us our pay, and therefore we ought to conform to his orders.’

‘By my faith, my lord,’ answered the souldich,  
‘he

‘he pays badly, and our companions complain much of it: he owes us now six months pay.’

‘He will pay you well,’ replied the earl: ‘money never comes disagreeably.’ On this, the fouldich left the earl, and returned to his companions, to whom he related what you have heard.

‘Gentlemen,’ said the canon, ‘I will not desist from making an excursion, notwithstanding what has been said, for I see clearly they wish to put off all such attempts. They do not desire we should commit hostilities, that we may not have cause to demand our pay: but my opinion is, that we take the field.’

They selected those who should form this expedition, and resolved to undertake it on the morrow having their arms quite ready.

The lord John de Ferrande, one of the knights of the king of Portugal, who had learnt they were desirous of performing some enterprize, came to them, and brought letters to the canon de Roberfac. He read them, and found that the king of Portugal forbid him to quit his quarters; adding, that he was well informed it was through his means all these expeditions were thought of.

The canon was much enraged at this order, and said to the knight,—‘John, I see plainly the king will not permit me to make any excursion. Now, suppose I remain in my house, do you think that the others, who are better knights and more valiant than I, will also stay at home and ~~be idle~~ their enterprize? Oh no, by my troth, I see to-morrow; for they are determined

mined and prepared to take the field.' 'My lord,' replied Ferrande, 'command them, in the king's name, not to do so.' 'By my faith,' said the canon, 'I will do no such thing: do you, who belong to the king, order them yourself.'

Things remained in this state all night. In the morning, the trumpets sounded, when the knights and squires, being armed and mounted, came before the canon's house, who had not put on his armour. On the English and Gascon knights drawing up, he came to the window, and told them the king of Portugal would not allow him, nor any of his party, to make an excursion. 'By my faith,' answered they, 'we will have a ride, since we are so well inclined to it: and so shall you too, for it shall never be reproached you, that when we had taken the field, you staid at home.' The canon was then obliged to arm himself, and mount his horse. The Portuguese knight, the lord Ferrande, was obliged to do the same; so much was he pressed by the others, but it occasioned him to stand in the ill graces of the king, and he was near being hanged.

They marched out of Besiouse to the amount of about four hundred spears and as many archers; and, taking the Seville road towards a castle and town called Ban,\* continued their march until they arrived, and surrounded the part which seemed most easy to be taken. They dismounted, formed themselves in order of at-

---

\* Ban. Q.

tack, entered the ditches, which were dry, and began the assault vigorously.

At this time, there were no men at arms in the town of Ban. The inhabitants, though badly armed, mounted the walls and defended themselves as well as they were able with lances and javelins, but this could not last long. They therefore began to treat with the assailants, and at length surrendered, on having their lives and fortunes spared, declaring they would put themselves under the obedience of don Fernando king of Portugal.

They were well received in the town, which they entered to refresh themselves; when they began to examine by what means they could gain the castle. They saw it might be taken; and, that same evening, some of the army began to skirmish. On the morrow, a more regular attack commenced.

The governor of the castle was a gentleman of the country called Peter Jagoufes, but he was not an able man at arms, as he shewed; for as soon as he saw himself thus attacked, and so many men at arms advancing, he took fright, entered into terms, and surrendered the castle on his and the garrison's lives being spared. They strengthened it with good men at arms and archers, and then departed towards another castle, seven leagues distant, called la Courtisse.\* On their arrival, they instantly began the attack very sharply; but those within de-

---

\* Courtisse. Q.



fended themselves to the utmost of their power, and disdained to surrender. At the first attack, which was severe, the governor of the castle called Radulph, was slain. He was an expert and valiant man at arms, but, having adventured himself too rashly on the bulwarks, was killed by an arrow. On his death the others lost courage: the castle was taken, and the greater part of the garrison put to the sword. Thus did the canon and his companions gain the castle of la Courtisse. They strengthened it with a new garrison; and, having well supplied it with every thing, they marched towards the city of Seville the grand.

---

## CHAP. X.

THE CANON AND HIS COMPANIONS GAIN MUCH BOOTY FROM THE KING OF CASTILLE.—THEY MUTINY AGAINST THE KING OF PORTUGAL, WHO ORDERS THEIR PAY TO BE INSTANTLY DELIVERED TO THEM.

THESE English and Gascon men at arms continued marching until they came to Jaffre, ten leagues from Seville. It is a badly inclosed town; but there is a very strong monastery which those of the town and country had fortified, and they had retreated thither trusting to its strength.

On their arrival, the town of Jaffre was immediately taken and burnt. They soon attacked the monastery; but it was an hour before it was taken,



when those who first entered it gained great pil-  
lage: many were there slain. Having received  
intelligence that there were in some marshy  
grounds, in an adjoining valley, upwards of  
twenty thousand head of cattle, pigs, cows and  
sheep, they pushed forward; and, having enter-  
ed the marsh, ordered their infantry to drive out  
the cattle. They then resolved to return to their  
quarters in Besioufe, and set out accordingly.  
They arrived there on the evening of the ensu-  
ing day with all their booty; by which they had  
provisions in abundance, and for a long time.

Thus ended this expedition. When the lord  
Ferrande returned to Lisbon to the king, and re-  
ported to him what they had done against their  
enemies, and the great booty they had made, he  
imagined the king would have been well pleased;  
but no, for he said to him,—‘How, thou stinking  
rascal, hast thou dared, after the positive denial  
I sent them, to consent to their making an ex-  
cursion, and to accompany them thyself? By  
St. Jacob, I will have thee hanged.’ The  
knight, on this, cast himself on his knees, and  
said,—‘My lord, their captain acquitted himself  
dutifully and loyally; but the others by force  
made him go with them, as well as myself, to  
show them the country. When the expedition  
has so well succeeded, you ought to pardon it.’

Notwithstanding this speech, the king ordered  
him to prison, where he remained until the earl  
of Cambridge delivered him when he came to  
Lisbon on the business of which you shall hear.

After the English and Gascons were returned  
to

to the town of Besioufe, and had remained there some time, they resolved to send to the king of Portugal to demand their pay. They chose unanimously the lord Talbot, a baron from Wales, as their ambassador. When the lord Talbot was come to Lisbon, and had remonstrated with the king on the subject of his mission, the king only made for answer, 'that they had twice made excursions contrary to his orders, which had much displeased him, and had been the cause of the delay in their payment.' As he could not obtain any other answer, lord Talbot returned to his companions, and related what the king had said, which much angered them.

This same week, the earl of Cambridge quitted Estremoz and came to Besioufe, where he took up his lodgings, in a monastery of monks on the outside of the town. The knights in garrison were rejoiced on hearing this; for there were among them some who were unable to wait so long for their pay from the king, and said among themselves,—'We are marvellously well taken care of: we have been in this country almost a year, and have never received any money. It is impossible but our commander must have had some, for he would never have borne it for so great a length of time.'

These murmurings increased so much that they declared they would not longer suffer such treatment, and fixed a day to debate the matter among themselves. The place of conference was appointed in a handsome church situated without the town of Besioufe, and opposite to the Cordeliers,

deliers, where the earl of Cambridge had his residence. The canon of Roberfac promised to attend: indeed, it was well he did, for otherwise it would have turned out badly.

About eight o'clock, they were all assembled, except the canon, such as fir William Beauchamp, fir Matthew Gournay his uncle, the lord Talbot, fir William Hermon;\* and, of Gascons, the fouldich de la Trane, the lord de la Barde, the lord de Châteauneuf and several more, who began to speak and make their complaints known to each other. There was among them a knight bastard brother to the king of England, called fir John Sounder, who was louder than all the rest, and said,—‘The earl of Cambridge has brought us hither: every day we venture our lives, and are willing so to do, for his service, and yet he keeps our pay. I therefore advise, that we form a strict union among ourselves, and unanimously agree to display the pennon of St. George, declaring ourselves friends to God, and enemies to all the world; for if we do not make ourselves feared, we shall not have any thing.’ ‘By my faith,’ replied fir William Helmon, ‘you say well, and we will do it.’ All agreed to the proposal, and considered whom they should choose for their leader: they thought they could not have a better than Sounder, for he would have more leisure to do mischief, and had greater courage for it, than the others.

They hoisted the pennon of St. George, and cried out,—‘A Sounder, a Sounder, that valiant

---

\* Hermon. Q. Froissart calls him afterwards Helmon.

bastard!

bastard! Friends to God, and enemies to all mankind.' They were then well inclined to attack the town of Besioufe, and declare war against the king of Portugal.

Sir Matthew Gournay and fir William Beauchamp had long argued against attacking Besioufe, but had been little attended to. At the moment they had displayed the pennon of St. George, and were quitting the church, the canon arrived, and, pushing through the crowd, got up to the head altar, when he cried aloud,—‘ My fair firs, what are you going to do? Be orderly and temperate, I conjure you; for I see you are much disturbed.’

Sir John Sounder and fir William Helmon then advanced to him, and related what they had done and what were their intentions. The canon, by fair language, restrained them: ‘ Consider, gentlemen, what you are about: that which you intend is folly and madness. We cannot destroy ourselves more effectually. If we make war on this country, our enemies will hear of it, and will gain courage when they see we cannot oppose them. We shall thus ruin ourselves two ways; for our enemies will be rejoiced and assured of what at present they may only suspect, and we shall forfeit our loyalty to the earl of Cambridge.’

‘ And what would you have us do, canon?’ said Sounder: ‘ we have expended much more than our pay, and since our arrival in Portugal we have not had any loan or any payment whatever. If you have been paid, we have not, and your complaints will be vain.’

‘By my faith, Sounder,’ replied the canon, ‘I have not received more than you have, nor will I receive any thing without your knowledge.’

Some of the knights present answered,—‘We firmly believe you: but all things must have an end. Shew us how we may get clear of this business with honour, and that as speedily as may be; for if we be not well paid, and in a short time, matters will go ill.’

The canon de Roberfac then replied,—‘Fair sirs, I would advise first of all, in the situation we are in, that we wait on the earl of Cambridge, and remonstrate with him on these matters of which he ought to be informed.’ ‘And who is there among us,’ said some one, ‘who will remonstrate with him?’ ‘I will,’ replied Sounder; ‘but you must all avow what I shall say.’ The whole company promised to do so. They then departed with the pennon of St. George, which they had that day displayed, carried before them, and came to the Cordeliers, where the earl of Cambridge was lodged.

Just as he was going to dinner, these companions, to the amount of about seven hundred, entered the court, and demanded the earl, who, having quitted his chamber, came into the hall to speak with them. The knights had advanced with Sounder at their head, and remonstrated in an agreeable manner and speech, saying, ‘My lord, it was you who assembled us in England; and we came hither according to your entreaties as well as the others who are now without: we have

have left our country to oblige you. You are therefore our chief, and we must look to you for our pay, of which hitherto we have not received any thing; for, as to the king of Portugal, we should never have come to his country, nor entered his service, if you had not been our paymaster. However, if you say that the war concerns only the king of Portugal, and that you are not interested in it, we will soon pay ourselves our subsidy, for we will overrun the country, let the consequences be what they may.'

'Sounder,' replied the earl, 'I do not say that you ought not to be paid; but, that if you overrun this country, you will throw great blame on me, as well as on the king of England, who is so strictly allied to the king of Portugal.'

'And what would you have us do?' asked Sounder. 'I will,' replied the earl, 'that you choose three of our knights, an Englishman, a Gascon and a German, and that these three set out for Lisbon, to explain to the king this business, and the length of time he has delayed payment to our companions. When you shall thus have summoned him, you will have a better right to follow your own inclinations.' 'By my faith,' said the canon de Roberfac, 'my lord of Cambridge says well, and speaks wisely and boldly.' They all agreed to this last proposal; but, notwithstanding, they would not take down the pennon of St. George, saying that since they had unanimously raised it in Portugal, they would not lower it as long as they should remain there.

They



They then selected those who were to wait on the king of Portugal: sir William Helmon was chosen by the English, sir Thomas Simon by the Germans, the lord de Châteauneuf by the Gascons. These three knights set out, and continued their journey until they came to Lisbon, where they found the king, who received them handsomely, asked from them the news, and what their companions were doing?

‘My lord,’ they replied, ‘they are all in very good health, and would willingly make some excursions, and employ this season otherwise than they do; for long idleness is not agreeable to them.’ ‘Well,’ said the king, ‘they shall very shortly make an excursion, and I will accompany them, and you will let them know this from me.’

‘My lord,’ answered sir William, ‘we are sent hither by their orders, to tell you, that since their arrival in this country, they have neither had loan nor payment from you, and that they are not satisfied; for whoever wishes to obtain the love and service of men at arms must pay them better than you have hitherto done, the neglect of which they have for some time taken to heart; for they know not on whom they depend, and have thrown the blame on our captains, so that the affair was on the point of taking a very disagreeable turn. Our chiefs excused themselves, as it was known they had not received any thing. Now, know for a truth, they will be paid their full pay, if you wish their services; and if you will not pay them, they assure you by us, that they will pay themselves from your country. Therefore consider well this business,

business, and give us such an answer as we may carry back; for they are only waiting our return.'

The king mused a little, and then said; 'Sir William, it is but just they should be paid: but they have much vexed me, by disobeying my orders, in making two excursions, which if they had not done, they should long ago have been fully satisfied in every respect.'

'Sire,' replied sir William, 'if they have made any excursions, they have turned out to your advantage: they have taken towns, castles, and overrun the territories of your enemy, even as far as Seville: all this has been gallantly performed. They ought not to lose this season, which, indeed, they are determined not to do; for they declare, on our return, they will pay themselves, unless they shall receive by us a more gracious answer, than as yet they have obtained from you.'

'Well,' said the king, 'inform them, that within fifteen days at the latest, I will give orders for their pay to be delivered to them, to the utmost farthing; but tell the earl of Cambridge that I wish to speak with him.' 'Sire,' replied sir William, 'I will do so, and you say well.'

As he finished these words, dinner was served, when they dined together, and the king made the three sit at his table, and feasted them much. Thus passed the day, and on the morrow they returned to their friends. As soon as their arrival was known, the knights crowded about them, to learn what they had done: they related to them the answer, and the king's promise, with which they

were all well satisfied. 'Now see,' said Sounder, 'if riot be not sometimes of use: we have advanced the delivery of our pay, by having been a little riotous: he fares well who is feared.'

The three knights waited on the earl of Cambridge, and reported to him what they had done, and that the king wanted to speak with him. He set out from the town in the morning, and rode to Lisbon, where he was joyfully received by his son and daughter-in-law.

The king had a long conference with him, when they determined on certain expeditions. The king, in consequence, issued his summons throughout the realm, for every one to be prepared for the field by the seventh of June, and to assemble between the towns of Badajos and Clemence.

This summons was published throughout the kingdom of Portugal, when all descriptions of men armed and prepared themselves in the best manner they were able, to be at the rendezvous on foot, by the appointed day.

On the arrival of the earl of Cambridge at Lisbon, don Ferrande obtained his liberty, with whom the king had been much angered, on account of those before mentioned excursions. The earl took his leave, returned to his companions in high spirits and ordered them to be in readiness by the day which had been fixed on. Soon after money arrived for the pay of the troops, the captains first, so that every one was contented; but the pension of St. George was still displayed.

ver

CHAP.

## CHAP. XI.

THE KINGS OF CASTILLE AND PORTUGAL ASSEMBLE THEIR FORCES.—PEACE MADE BETWEEN THEM AGAINST THE WILL OF THE ENGLISH.

**D**ON John of Castille was not idle in collecting numbers of men at arms. Two thousand spears, knights and squires, and four thousand infantry, had come to him from France: he had, besides, in his own country, ten thousand horse, and as many foot. As he resided at Seville, he was not ignorant of the summons which the king of Portugal had issued: he therefore, finding himself the strongest, thought he should act more honourably in this war, if he sent to the king of Portugal, to ask him to fix on any spot in his dominions, where the two armies could meet, and fight it out; and that, if he would not, he would offer a place in Spain for the combat.

He therefore sent a herald with this message, who rode on until he came to Lisbon, where he delivered it to the king, word for word. The king replied to the herald, that he would maturely consider the option given to him, and would send to the king of Spain his final answer. The herald, having executed his commission, took leave of the king, and returned to Seville.

He found there the king and his barons, as well as those who had come from France, Arra-

gon and Galicia, to whom he reported all he had heard or seen.

No long time passed before the king of Portugal was advised by the councils of the English to offer a place in his own country, for the two armies to combat. Sir Thomas Simon and the souldich de la Trane, were ordered on the part of the king to seek for a proper situation: they chose a spot between Elvas and Badajos, where there was room sufficient for the battle. As they were going to execute this order, the two knights and their men skirmished with some advanced forces of the king of Castille: the engagement was severe, and several were slain and wounded on both sides. They, however, returned to the king of Portugal, and related where they had chosen a fit situation, and also the name of the place.

A German knight, called sir John Coustedor, was ordered to carry this intimation, attended by a herald, to the king of Spain. The knight set out, and rode to Seville, where he found the king, and related what the king of Portugal had instructed him to say, that he accepted his offer of combat, and had fixed on a place for the field of battle, between Elvas and Badajos; and that within five days after his return from Seville, he would there find the king of Portugal with his whole army, who desired nothing better than to give him battle.

The Spaniards were much pleased with this news, as were also the French. Sir Tristan de Roye, sir John de Vernettes, sir Peter de Villames, and others, taking with them the knight from Portugal,



Portugal, entertained him magnificently for one whole day in Seville, and shewed him as much respect as possible. They escorted him as far as Jaffres, when they returned; and the knight continued his journey to the king of Portugal and his knights, and told them how he had delivered his message, and the answer he had received, which gave them great satisfaction.

It was not long before the king of Portugal came and encamped where his army was, between Elvas and Badajos. It was a handsome plain below some olive trees; and he had brought thither the greater part of his subjects from whom he could expect assistance: they might amount to about fifteen thousand men.

On the fourth day afterwards, the earl of Cambridge arrived with the English, in handsome array: they were about six hundred men at arms and as many archers: they encamped themselves together, separate from the king's army.

When the king of Spain heard that the king of Portugal was encamped on the field where the battle was to be fought, he seemed delighted, and said,—‘Come, let us make haste: our enemies are waiting: it is time for us to set out. We have offered them battle, which they have accepted, and are ready by the day appointed, so that an engagement must ensue: let us therefore march thither.’

The men at arms were then ordered to advance with their men, for the king was setting out. All the knights, squires and men at arms, in consequence,



quence, broke up their quarters, both Spaniards and French, and followed the banners of don John of Castille, who encamped two short leagues from Badajos, in the plains of Elvas.

The king of Spain had in his army upwards of thirty thousand fighting men, including those mounted on genets: they were in the whole fixty thousand. In this situation, the two armies remained opposite to each other. There was only between them the mountain of Badajos, which is a large town belonging to the king of Spain, and where his men went whenever they were in want of provision. The city of Elvas was on the opposite side, and belonged to the king of Portugal.

On the plain there were daily skirmishes; for the young bachelors who were desirous to advance themselves went thither, when some gallant feats were continually performed: they then returned to their quarters. Things remained in this state for upwards of fifteen days; and it was not any fault in the king of Spain that the combat did not take place, for it depended solely on the king of Portugal, who, not being in sufficient force to meet the Spaniards, was afraid of the event. He well knew, that if he were defeated, his kingdom would be lost, and that whole season he had been expecting the duke of Lancaster, with the great aid he was to bring him from England of four thousand men at arms and the same number of archers.

The earl of Cambridge had assured the king of Portugal, that he might depend on this, and thought nothing could prevent it; for the duke  
of

of Lancaster, when he was setting out for Scotland, had sworn to him by his faith, that on his return, he would think of nothing else, and would instantly come to Portugal with such an army as should enable him to engage with the king of Castille.

True it is, that the duke of Lancaster did every thing in his power to prevail on the king and his council to listen to this business; but on account of the internal troubles which had happened this year, and some events which had fallen out in Flanders, the king and his council would not consent to this expedition to Portugal, so that all the men at arms were detained in England.

When the king of Portugal heard this, and found that he must not expect any succours from England, he began to open a treaty: the grand master of Calatrava, don Pedro de Modesque, the bishop of Burgos and the bishop of Lisbon, entered into negotiations for peace between Portugal and Spain. These were carried on so successfully, that peace was made, without any notice being taken of the English. The earl of Cambridge was very melancholy on learning this news, and would willingly have made war on the king of Portugal, if he had been strong enough in the country; but he was not: he was therefore obliged to endure this peace whether he would or not.

The English complained that the king of Portugal had behaved ill to them, from the beginning to the end, and that he had always dissembled with the Spaniards, for he had never had any inclination

clination to fight with them. The king excused himself, by throwing all the blame on the duke of Lancaster, and the English, for not coming according to their promises, and assured them that at that moment he could not act otherwise.

---

## CHAP. XII.

A JOUST BETWEEN A FRENCH KNIGHT AND AN ENGLISH SQUIRE.—THE EARL OF CAMBRIDGE LEADS BACK HIS ARMY TO ENGLAND, WITH HIS SON, WHOSE BETROTHED WIFE, THE INFANTA OF PORTUGAL, IS AFTERWARDS MARRIED TO THE KING OF CASTILLE.

**I**N the army of the king of Castille was a young knight from France, called sir Tristan de Roye, who was desirous of displaying his courage. When he saw, that as peace was concluded, there would not be any engagement, he determined not to quit Spain, without doing something to be talked of. He sent a herald to the English army, requesting, that since peace had put an end to the combat, some one would have the kindness to tilt with him three courses with the lance before the city of Badajos. When this request was brought to the army, they consulted together, and said it ought not to be refused.

A young English squire then stepped forth, called Miles Windfor, who wished honourably to be created a knight, and said to the herald; 'Friend, return

return to thy masters, and tell sir Trifan de Roye, that to-morrow he shall be delivered from his vow, by Miles Windfor, before the city of Badajos, according to his request.'

The herald returned, and related the answer to his masters, and sir Tristran de Roye, who was highly pleased. On the morrow morning, Miles Windfor left the army of the earl of Cambridge, and went towards Badajos, which was hard by, as there was only the mountain to cross, well accompanied by his friends; such as sir Matthew Gournay, sir William Beauchamp; sir Thomas Simon, the fouldich de la Trane, the lord de Châteauneuf, the lord de la Barde, and several more; there were upwards of one hundred knights on the spot, where the tournament was to be performed. Sir Tristan de Roye was already there, accompanied by French and Bretons.

Miles was created a knight by the fouldich de la Trane, as being the most accomplished knight there, and the person who had been in the greatest number of brilliant actions. When the combatants were completely armed, with lances in their rests, and mounted, they spurred their horses, and, lowering their spears, met each other with such force that their lances were twice broken against their breast-plates, but no other hurt ensued. They then took their third lance, and the shock was so great that the heads of Bourdeaux steel pierced their shields, and through all their other armour even to the skin, but did not wound them: the spears were

shattered; and the broken pieces flew over their helmets. This combat was much praised by all the knights of each side who were present. They then took leave of each other with much respect, and returned to their different quarters, for no other deeds of arms were performed.

Peace being now restored, both Spaniards and Portuguese returned to their own homes. In such manner was this great assembly of Spaniards, English and Portuguese broken up.

At this time, news was brought to the army of the king of Spain, that the king of Granada had declared war against the kings of Barbary and Tremecen, and that all men at arms who might wish to go thither would be received into pay. The king of Granada had sent passports, and ordered his messengers to say, that to those who arrived in Granada, he would advance a quarter's pay.

Several French knights who wished to advance themselves, as sir Tristan de Roye, sir Geoffry de Chargny, sir Peter de Clermont, took leave of don John of Castille, and went to those parts in search of deeds of arms. Some English went thither also, but they were few in number; for the earl of Cambridge conducted them to England, carrying his son with him. He shewed how much dissatisfied he was with the king by not leaving this son behind, who had been betrothed to the infanta of Portugal.

The earl said the air of Portugal did not agree with his son's health; and, in spite of every thing the king could urge, he would not permit him

him to stay, adding, that he was too young to remain in Portugal, from which the following consequences ensued :

About a year after the conclusion of this peace, when the English were returned home with the earl of Cambridge, the queen of don John of Castille died : she was daughter to the king of Arrogan. The king being thus a widower, it was considered by the barons and prelates of Spain and Portugal, that the properest alliance which could be made with the lady Beatrice of Portugal was the king of Spain, who could not more nobly connect himself than with the infanta. In order to confirm the peace between the two kingdoms, the king of Portugal consented, and broke off the match with the son of the earl of Cambridge, by a dispensation from the pope, who confirmed this new alliance. Thus became the infanta of Portugal queen of Spain, Gallicia and Castille ; and she brought the king a son the first year of her marriage, to his great joy.

The king of Portugal died soon after this event ; but the Portuguese were unwilling to submit themselves to the dominion of the Spaniards, and gave the crown to a bastard brother of the king, who was grand master of the order of Avis\*, and called the bastard of Portugal. He was a valiant man, had always borne arms, and much beloved by the Portuguese, as they showed ; for they crowned him king, and

---

\* Avis, Froissart calls him master Denys. For particulars of the order of the Bird, see the *Histoire des Ordres de Chivalerie*.



chose him their lord for his valour. This transaction was the cause of great wars between the kingdoms of Spain and Portugal, as you shall hear related in the course of this history.

When the earl of Cambridge, the canon de Roberfac, and the English knights were returned from Portugal, and had waited on the king and duke of Lancaster, they were very graciously entertained, as was right, and then they were asked for news: they told them a sufficiency, and the history of their whole campaign.

The duke of Lancaster, whom this business touched more essentially than any other, on account of the claim he made to Castille, in right of his wife, the lady Constance, eldest daughter to don Pedro, inquired of his brother every particular, and how they had conducted themselves in Portugal.

The earl told him that the armies remained upwards of fifteen days opposite to each other: 'and because, my fair brother, there came no intelligence of you, the king of Portugal hastily made peace, and, in spite of every thing we could say, he would not consent to a battle: our men were much concerned thereat, for they would willingly have hazarded it. Seeing, therefore, that affairs were not on a very sure foundation, I have brought home my son, although he has been betrothed to the infanta.' 'I believe you were in the right,' replied the duke; 'but perhaps they may break this marriage, if they shall find a more agreeable alliance.' 'By my faith,'

faith,' said the earl 'happen what may, I have done nothing that I repent of.'

Thus ended this conversation between the duke of Lancaster and earl of Cambridge, when they entered on other matters. We will now leave them, and the wars of Spain and Portugal, to return to those of Ghent, the earl and country of Flanders, which were very destructive.

---

### CHAP. XIII.

GHEENT IS IN GREAT DISTRESS FOR PROVISIONS;  
THEY ARE SUCCOURED BY THE INHABITANTS  
OF LIEGE.

**E**VER since the burning of Grammont, and the breaking up the siege of Ghent, through the grief of the earl of Flanders for the death of his cousin, the young lord d'Anghien, as you have before heard, the war was carried on solely by the garrisons in the different towns. The whole country was for the earl, except the Quatre Metiers, whence provisions were sent into Ghent, as well as from the county of Alost. But the earl of Flanders on hearing that cheese, butter and other things were sent to Ghent from Alost and the adjacent villages, soon put a stop to it, by ordering the garrison of Dendremond to burn and destroy the whole of that flat country; which orders being obeyed, the poor people who lived on the produce of their cattle,

were forced to fly into Brabant and Hainault and the greater part to beg their bread.

There still, however, remained a country dependant on the Quatre Metiers, whence Ghent drew all its provision, which their enemies could not prevent.

This whole winter of 1382, the earl and country of Flanders had so much constrained Ghent that nothing could enter the place by land or water: he had persuaded the duke of Brabant and duke Albert to shut up their countries so effectually, that no provisions could be exported thence, but secretly, and with a great risk to those who attempted it. It was thought by the most intelligent, that it could not be long before they perished through famine, for all the store-houses of corn were empty, and the people could not obtain bread for money: when the bakers had baked any, it was necessary to guard their shops, for the populace who were starving would have broken them open. It was melancholy to hear these poor people, (for men, women and children, of good substance, were in this miserable plight,) make their daily complaints and cries to Philip von Atraveld, their commander in chief. He took great compassion on them, and made several very good regulations, for which he was much praised. He ordered the granaries of the monasteries and rich men to be opened, and divided the corn among the poor, at a fixed price. By such means he gave comfort to the town of Ghent, and governed it well. Sometimes there came to them  
in

in casks flour and baked bread from Holland and Zealand, which were of great assistance; for, had they not been thus succoured by those countries, they would have been much sooner defeated.

The duke of Brabant had forbidden any of his subjects to carry provisions to the inhabitants of Ghent, under pain of death; but, if they would run the risk of coming to seek them, they might sell or give. When Lent came, they were in the greatest distress; for they had not any provision suitable to that time; insomuch that a body of soldiers and other persons, to the amount of twelve thousand, driven desperate by famine, left the town and went to Brussels. On their arrival, the gates were closed, for they were doubtful of their intentions, not knowing what to think of them. When they were near to Brussels, they sent a party unarmed to the gates, in search of provision, begging, for the love of God, they would have pity on them, and let them have victuals for their money, as they were dying of hunger, and would not do any harm to the country. The good people of Brussels had compassion on them, and carried them food sufficient to satisfy their hunger. They remained there to recruit themselves about three weeks, but did not enter any of the principal towns: they advanced as far as Louvain, the people of which place also took pity on them, and gave them many things. The leader and conductor of these men of Ghent was Francis Atremmen, who advised them how to act, and also

made for them their agreements with the different towns. During the time they were refreshing themselves in the country round Louvain, he went to Liege, accompanied by twelve others, where he remonstrated so effectually with the magistrates that they consented, with the approbation of their bishop, the lord Arnold d'Ercle, to send to the earl of Flanders, and use their utmost endeavours to make a peace between them: adding, that if Liege had been as near to them as Brabant and Hainault, they would have more essentially assisted them in their rights, and in defending their privileges. However, they said, ' We will now do every thing we can for you, and, as you are merchants, and merchandise ought to pass freely every where, we have determined that you may contract at this moment for five or six hundred cart-loads of corn and flour, which we will allow you to have, provided the good people from whom this provision comes can be satisfied.

' Our commerce will be suffered to pass through Brabant, for that country is in friendship with us; and, notwithstanding Brussels is shut against you, we know it is more through fear than inclination. The Brusselers have great compassion on your sufferings; but the duke and duchess of Brabant, at the solicitations of the earl of Flanders, are more his friends than yours, as it is natural that great lords should support each other.'

The men of Ghent were much pleased with the affectionate offers the Liegeois made them;

they

they warmly thanked them, and said, that with such allies and friends, the town of Ghent might do much.

Francis and the citizens of Ghent who had accompanied him into Liege, having finished their business, took leave of the magistrates, who ordered certain persons to attend them through the country to collect carts and horses. In two days they had six hundred loaded with corn and flour, for such stores were then more necessary to them than any others. They set out on their return, passing between Louvain and Brussels. When Francis Atremen was returned to his men whom he had left in the neighbourhood of Louvain, he related to them the love and courtesy which those of Liege had shewn, and the offer they had made of their friendship. He added, that they would go to Brussels to speak with the duchess of Brabant, and beg and entreat of her, on the part of the good town of Ghent, to condescend to mediate between them and the earl their lord, so that they might obtain peace. They replied, 'God's will be done,' and marched to Brussels.

The duke of Brabant, at this time, was at Luxembourg on his affairs; and Francis, by permission of the duchess, who was desirous to see him, entered the town, attended only by two other persons. They waited on her at her hôtel at Colleberge, where the duchess had assembled part of her council; and, throwing themselves on their knees, Francis, who spoke for all, said, — 'Much honoured and dear lady, may it please  
you,



you, out of your great humility, to have compassion on the inhabitants of Ghent, who are not able, by any means hitherto employed, to obtain the pardon of their lord; but if you, very dear lady, would mediate between our lord and us, so that he would hear but reason and have mercy on his vassals, you would do a most charitable act, and our good friends and neighbours of Liege would unite to assist you at any time and in any manner you shall please.'

The duchess replied with much gentleness, 'that she had long been sorry for the dissensions which had arisen between her brother \* the earl and them, and would willingly have put an end to them some time past, had she been able or had she known how to do it: but you so often oppose him, and are so obstinate in your opinions, that it keeps up his anger and hatred against you. Notwithstanding all this, for love of God and through compassion, I will cheerfully undertake this business, and send to request he will have the goodness to come to Tournay, where I will order my privy council. You will also exert yourselves to gain the council of Hainault, to accompany that of Liege, which you say is ready to serve you.' 'Yes, madam, for they have so promised us.' 'Well,' said the duchess, 'I will do something that you shall hear of.' They replied, 'God preserve, madam, your soul and body.'

At these words they took leave of the duchess

---

\* *Her brother.* He had married one of her sisters.

and her council, departed from Bruffels, and returned to their men and carriages, which were waiting for them, and then continued their road to Ghent.

When the news arrived that their people were returning, and bringing with them six hundred cart-loads of provision, of which they were in such great want, they were highly delighted: these provisions, however, from Liege were not sufficient to maintain the town fifteen days; but to those who are comfortless a little thing gives hope.

They made a numerous procession to meet this convoy, and, by way of humbling themselves, they fell on their knees when they met it, and with uplifted hands, said to the merchants and drivers,—‘ Ah, good people, you do an act of great charity: you bring comfort to the lower classes in Ghent, who would not have had where-withal to eat, if you had not come. Let us first give our thanks and praises to God, and then to you.’

In this manner were the provisions attended to the market-place, and there unloaded: they were then delivered out in small proportions to those who were in the greatest want; and five thousand men were ordered to arm themselves, and to escort back these carts as far as Brabant, and out of all danger.

The earl of Flanders, who resided at Bruges, had information of all this, and how Ghent was so much straitened that it could not hold out for  
any

any length of time. You may imagine he was not very much vexed at their poverty, any more than those of his council, who would, with pleasure, have seen the town of Ghent destroyed. Gilbert Matthew and his brothers, the deacon of small trades of Ghent, and the provost of Harlebecque, were in high spirits at what they heard.

All the events happened in Lent, during the months of March and April 1382\*. The earl of Flanders determined to lay siege to Ghent once more, but with a much superior army to what he had hitherto brought against it; for he declared he would invade the Quatre Metiers, and burn and destroy them, as they had been too active in assisting Ghent. The earl therefore signified his intentions to all the principal towns in Flanders, that they might be ready in time. Immediately after the procession at Bruges, he was to march from thence, to lay siege to Ghent and destroy it. He wrote also to those knights and squires who were dependant on him in Hainault, to meet him at Bruges at the appointed day, or even eight days before.

---

\* 1382. That is beginning the year at January, otherwise 1381.

## CHAP. XIV.

THE EARL OF FLANDERS SENDS A HARSH ANSWER TO THOSE WHO WISHED TO MEDIATE A PEACE BETWEEN HIM AND GHENT.—THE POPULACE, UNDER THE NAME OF MAILLOTTINS, RISE AGAIN AT PARIS.

**N**OTWITHSTANDING all these summons, levies and orders, which the earl of Flanders was issuing, the dukes of Brabant, duke Albert and the bishop of Liege, exerted themselves so much, that a meeting of their councils, to consider of the means of establishing a peace, was ordered to be held in the city of Tournay.

The earl of Flanders, at the request of these lords, and the dukes of Brabant, although he intended to act contrary, gave his terms of accommodations; and these conferences were fixed for the end of Easter, at Tournay, in the year 1382.

Twelve deputies came from the bishoprick of Liege and the chief towns, with sir Lambert de Perney, a very discreet knight. The dukes of Brabant sent her council thither, and some of the principal inhabitants from the great towns. Duke Albert met likewise his council from Hainault, his bailiff, sir Simon de Lalain, with others. All these came to Tournay in Easter-week; and Ghent sent also twelve deputies, of whom Philip von Artaveld was the head. The inhabitants of Ghent had resolved to  
accede

accede to whatever terms their deputies should agree on, with the exception that no one was to be put to death ; but that if it pleased the earl, their lord, he might banish from Ghent, and the country of Flanders, all those who were disagreeable to him, and whom he might wish to punish, without any possibility of their return. This resolution they had determined to abide by ; and Philip von Artaveld was willing, if he should have angered the earl ever so little, during the time he was governor of Ghent, to be one of the banished men, for life, out of the regard he had for the lower ranks of people.

Certain it is, that when he set out from Ghent for Tournay, men, women and children cast themselves before him on their knees, and with uplifted hands, besought him, that at whatever cost it might be, he would bring them back peace ; and, from the pity he felt for them, he had agreed to act as I have just related.

When the deputies from Liege, Brabant and Hainault, who had been sent to Tournay as mediators, had resided there three days expecting the earl, who neither came nor sent ; they were much surprised, and, consulting together, resolved to send to him at Bruges. In consequence, they dispatched thither sir Lambert de Perney, the lord de Compellant from Brabant, sir William de Hermen from Hainault and six citizens from the three countries. The earl of Flanders entertained them handsomely, as was right, but told them, ‘ that at that moment, it was not agreeable to him to come to Tournay ;  
yet



yet, in consideration for the cause which had brought them thither, and the trouble they had taken to come to Bruges, as well as out of respect to their lords, the dukes of Brabant his sister, duke Albert his cousin and the bishop of Liege, he would instantly send his council to Tournay with his final declaration, and what were his future intentions.' They therefore returned to Tournay, and related what the earl had said.

Six days afterwards, arrived at Tournay, by orders of the earl, the lord de Raseflez, the lord de Gontris, sir John Villame and the provost of Harlebecque, who made excuses from the earl why he came not in person. They then delivered the earl's determination, that the inhabitants of Ghent were not to expect peace from him, unless all persons, from the age of fifteen to sixty, submitted to come out of that city, bare headed in their shirts, with halters about their necks, on the road between Ghent and Bruges, where the earl would wait for them, and grant them pardon, or put them to death according to his pleasure.

When this answer was carried by the deputies of the three countries to those of Ghent, they were more confounded than ever. The bailiff of Hainault, then, addressing them, said,—' My good gentlemen, you are in great peril, as you may each of you judge, and we can assure you of it: now, if you accept these terms, he will not put all to death that shall present themselves before him, but only some who have angered him more than the rest; and means may be found to mollify him, and excite his compassion; so that those  
who



who may think themselves certain of death will be pardoned: accept, therefore, these offers, or at least consider well before you refuse them; for I believe you will never have such made to you again.'

Philip von Artaveld replied,—‘ We are not commissioned to treat on such terms by our townsmen, nor will they ever accept them; but if the citizens in Ghent, upon our return, after having informed them of the answer from the earl, shall be willing to submit themselves, it shall not be our fault that peace is not made. We give you our best and warmest thanks for the great trouble and pains you have taken in this business.’

They then took leave of those well-intentioned persons, and the other deputies from the principal towns of the three countries, and shewed plainly that they would not accept of the offered terms for peace. Philip von Artaveld and his companions went to their hotels, discharged their bills, and returned through Brabant to Ghent.

Thus was this conference broken up, which had been assembled with the best intentions, in the town of Tournay, and each man returned to his home. The earl of Flanders never made an inquiry what was the answer of the Ghent deputies, so very cheap did he hold them. He wished not for any treaty of peace; for he well knew he had pushed them so hard they could not hold out against him much longer, and that the end must be honourable to him: he was also desirous to reduce Ghent to such a situation that all other towns might take warning from it.

About this period the Parisians again rose, because

cause the king did not reside among them. They were afraid lest he should order his men at arms to force the gates of the city in the night-time, overrun it, and put to death whomsoever he pleased. To avoid this danger which they dreaded, they kept great guards in all the streets and squares every night, and barricaded the streets with chains, to prevent any cavalry from passing; nor would they suffer any one on foot to pass: and those found in the streets after nine o'clock, who were not acknowledged by them or their partisans were put to death.

There were in the city of Paris upwards of thirty thousand rich and powerful men armed, from head to foot, and so handsomely arrayed that few knights could afford to rival them. They had, in like manner, armed their servants, who had mallets of iron and lead for the bruising of helmets. They said in Paris, when they were mustering their men, that they were sufficient in number and strength to fight their own battles, without the aid of the greatest lord on the earth. These people were called the army of mallets.

## CHAP. XV.

THE CITIZENS OF GHENT, AFTER HAVING HEARD FROM PHILIP VON ARTAVELD THE TERMS OF PEACE WHICH HE HAD BROUGHT FROM THE CONFERENCES AT TOURNAY, MARCH OUT, TO THE NUMBER OF FIVE THOUSAND, TO ATTACK THE EARL OF FLANDERS IN BRUGES.

**W**HEN Philip von Artaveld and his companions returned to Ghent, great crowds of the common people, who only wished for peace, were much rejoiced on his arrival, and hoped to hear from him good news. They went out to meet him, saying, 'Ah, dear Phillip von Artaveld, make us happy : tell us what you have done, and how you have succeeded.'

Philip made no answer to these questions, but rode on, holding down his head : the more silent he was, the more they followed him, and were the more clamorous. Once or twice, as he was advancing to his house, he said, 'Get you to your homes, and may God preserve you from harm : to-morrow morning be in the market-place by nine o'clock, and there you shall hear every thing.' As they could not obtain any other answer, the people were exceedingly alarmed.

When Philip von Artaveld had dismounted at his door, and his companions were returned to their homes, Peter du Bois, anxious to learn what

what had been done, came in the evening to Phillip, and, having shut himself in a chamber with him, asked what success he had met with. Philip, who wished to hide nothing from him, replied,—‘By my faith, Peter, from the answer which my lord of Flanders has given by those of his council whom he sent to Tournay, he will not pardon a soul in Ghent; no not one.’ ‘By my troth,’ said Peter du Bois, ‘he is in the right, and has been wisely advised to send such an answer; for we are all equally implicated one as much as another. I have succeeded in my expectation; for the town of Ghent is in such confusion that it cannot well be appeased. We must become desperate, and it shall be seen if there be not prudent and valiant men in Ghent. In a few days, the town of Ghent shall be the most respected town in Christendom, or the most humbled. However, if we do perish in this quarrel, we shall not die alone. You must now, Philip, consider how you will relate the conferences of Tournay tomorrow, so that every one may be satisfied with your conduct. You are at this moment in high favour with the people, for two reasons; one, on account of the name you bear, for Jacob von Artaveld, your father, was formerly much beloved in this town; the other, from the gentle and friendly manner with which you address them, which they publicly praise: they will therefore firmly believe every thing you shall tell them; and, towards the end, you shall add, ‘If I were to advise, I would do so and so:’ but it is necessary

you consider this well, so that you stand on sure grounds and gain honour by it.'

'Peter,' said Philip von Artaveld, 'you speak truth; and I think I shall be able to explain and harangue in such a manner on the affairs of Ghent that, between ourselves, we who are the governors and leaders in Ghent shall live and die with honour.' Nothing more was said or done at that time, for they separated: Peter du Bois returned to his house, and Philip remained where he was.

You may easily imagine, when the day so eagerly expected was come, in which Philip was to report what had passed in the conferences at Tournay, that all the inhabitants of Ghent were early in the market place. It was on a Wednesday morning, and the time of meeting nine o'clock.

Philip von Artaveld, Peter du Bois, Peter le Nui-tré, Francis Atremen, and the other chiefs came there; and, having entered the town-hall, they ascended the staircase, when Philip, shewing himself from the windows, thus spoke: 'My good friends, it is true, that through the entreaties of the very noble lady the duchess of Brabant, the most puissant and noble prince duke Albert, regent of Hainault, Holland and Zealand, and of my lord the bishop of Liege, a conference was appointed to be holden at Tournay these last days, which the earl of Flanders was personally to attend, and which he had promised to the noble persons just mentioned, who have indeed most handsomely acquitted themselves. They sent thi-  
ther



ther their most able counsellors, and the principal inhabitants from the greatest towns, who waited several days in expectation of the earl of Flanders; but he came not, nor indeed sent any excuses. When they perceived this, they resolved to choose three knights from the three countries, and six citizens, and send them to him. Out of affection to us they undertook the business, and went to Bruges, where they found my lord of Flanders, who entertained them well, as they said, and willingly listened to them: he then declared, that out of respect to their lord, and to his sister-in-law, madame de Brabant, he would send his council to Tournay in the course of five or six days, so well instructed, that they would clearly explain his determined intention, which when they should hear, they would know how to act: not obtaining any other answer, they returned on the day appointed. In consequence of this, the Lord de Rasflez, the lord de Gontris, sir John Villames, and the provost of Harlebecque, came to Tournay, where they very graciously informed us of the will of the earl, and the only means of putting an end to this war. They declared his final terms for peace between him and the inhabitants of Ghent were, that every male inhabitant, excepting priests and monks, from the age of sixteen to that of sixty, should march out of the towns in their shirts, with bare heads and feet, and halters about their necks, and should thus go two leagues or more to the plains of Burlesquans, where they would meet the earl of Flanders, attended by such whom he may  
choose



choose to bring with him; and that, when he should see us in this situation, with joined hands, crying out for mercy, he would, if he pleased, take compassion on us. But I could not learn from his council, that there was the least plea of justice to put to death such numbers of people as would be there that day. Now, consider if you will have peace on these terms?’

When Philip had done speaking, it was a melancholy sight to behold men, women and children, bewailing, with tears, their husbands, fathers, brothers and neighbours. After this tumult and noise had lasted some time, Philip again addressed them, and cried out, ‘Silence, silence!’ when, on his beginning to speak, they ceased lamenting,—‘Worthy inhabitants of Ghent, you who are here assembled, are the majority of its citizens, and you have heard all I had to report to you: I see no means of remedy but a determined conduct. You know how very much we are straitened for all sorts of provision, and that there are thirty thousand persons in this town, who, in fifteen days, will not have bread to eat. In my opinion, we have but the choice of three things; the first, that we close all our gates, and then, after having confessed ourselves, most fully, retire into the churches and monasteries, and there die confessed and repentant, like martyrs, to whom no mercy has been shewn. In this state God will have pity on us, and on our souls; and wherever this shall be told or heard, they will say, that we died nobly, like loyal men at arms.

‘Or,

‘Or, let us resolve to march out, men, women and children, with halters about our necks, bare-headed, and with naked feet, and implore the mercy of my lord the earl: he is not so hard-hearted, nor so obstinate, but when he shall see us in such an humiliating condition, he will be softened, and take pity on his subjects; and I will be the first to offer him my head, in order to assuage his hatred, and sacrifice myself for the city of Ghent.’

‘Or, let us choose from five to six thousand of the most determined men in the town, and instantly march to attack the earl in Bruges; we will give him combat; and if we should be slain in the attempt, at least we shall die with honour, and God will have mercy upon us; and the world will say, that we have gallantly and valorously maintained our quarrel. If, however, in this battle we be victorious, and our Lord God, who in ancient times delegated his power into the hands of Judas Maccabeus, the chief of his Jewish people, so that the Syrians were defeated and slain, would be indulgent enough to grant us this kindness, we should be every where the most honoured people since the time of the Romans. Now, consider which of these three propositions you will make choice of, for one of them must be adopted.’

Those who were near to him, and had most distinctly heard what he had said, replied,—‘Ah, dear lord, we put our whole confidence in you: what would you advise us? for we will do whatever you think will be most for our advantage.’

‘By

‘By my faith’ then,’ said Philip, ‘I would advise that we all march in arms against my lord. We shall find him at Bruges; and, when he hears of our coming, he will fall forth and fight with us: for the pride of those in Bruges and about his person, who excite him day and night against us, will urge him to the combat. If God shall, through his mercy, grant that we gain the field, and defeat our enemies, our affairs will be instantly retrieved, and we shall be the most respected people in the universe. If we be defeated, we shall die honourably, and God will have pity on us; and the remainder of the inhabitants of Ghent will finish this business, and be pardoned by the earl our lord.’

At these words, they all shouted out, ‘We will follow this plan, and no other!’ Philip then said,—‘My good gentlemen, since you are thus resolved, return home and get ready your arms; for in the course of to-morrow, I am determined to march for Bruges: the remaining longer here will not be to our advantage. Within five days we shall know if we be to die, or to live with honour. I will order the constables of the different parishes to go from house to house, and choose the best armed and those most fit for the service.’

Immediately after the meeting broke up, and every one returned home to make ready, each according to his abilities, they kept the gates of the town so closely shut that no person whatever was suffered to come in or go out before Thursday afternoon, when those who were to march on this expedition

expedition were prepared: in all, about five thousand men, and not more.

They loaded about two hundred carts with cannon and artillery, and only seven with provisions; that is, five with bread and two with wine, for there were but two tuns of wine in the town. You may judge from this to what straits they had been reduced.

It was a miserable spectacle to see those who went, and those who remained. These last said to them,—‘ Good friends, you see what you leave behind; but never think of returning unless you can do so with honour, for you will not find any thing here. The moment we hear of your defeat, or death, we will set fire to the town, and perish in the flames, like men in despair.’

Those who were marching out replied, by way of comforting them,—‘ What you say is very just. Pray God for us; for we place our hopes in him, and trust he will assist you, as well as us, before our return.’

Thus did these five thousand men of Ghent march off with their slender stores, and encamped about a league from Ghent, but touched not their provision, taking up with what they could find in the country. On Friday, they marched the whole day, and then meddled not with their stores; but their scouts picked up some few things in the country, with which they made shift, and fixed their quarters that evening a long league from Bruges.

They halted there, considering it a proper place to wait for their enemies, for there were in  
front

front two extensive marshes, which were a good defence on one side; and they fortified themselves on the others with the carriages, and thus passed the night.

---

## CHAP. XVI.

THE ORDER OF BATTLE OF THE GHENT MEN.—  
THEY DEFEAT THE EARL OF FLANDERS AND  
THE MEN OF BRUGES.—THE MEANS BY WHICH  
THIS WAS BROUGHT ABOUT.

**T**HE Saturday\* was a fine bright day, and, being the feast of the Holy Cross, the inhabitants of Bruges, according to custom, made their usual processions. News was soon brought to Bruges, that the Ghent army was near at hand; so that every one began to murmur until the earl heard it, as well as those about his person.

He was much surprised, and said, 'See how the wickedness of these mad and foolish people of Ghent leads them to their destruction: indeed it is time this war should be put an end to.' His knights, and others, instantly waited on him, whom he very graciously received, and said, 'We will go and fight these wicked people: however,

---

\* The 3d of May. See l'Art de Verifier les Dates.  
they



they shew courage in preferring death by the sword, rather than famine.'

They determined to send out three men at arms, to examine the force and situation of the enemy. The marshal of Flanders ordered three valiant squires on this service, whose names were Lambert de Lambres, Damas de Buffy, and John de Béart: they set out, mounted on the finest horses in the town, and advanced toward the Ghent army. While this was going forward, every person in Bruges made himself ready, and shewed the most eager desire to sally forth and combat the men of Ghent; of whom I will now say a word, and of the manner in which they had drawn themselves up.

On the Saturday morning, Philip von Artaveld ordered his whole army to pay their devotions to God, and masses to be said in different places; (for there were with them several monks,) that every man should confess himself, and make other becoming preparations, and that they should pray to God with that truth, as people looking to him alone for mercy.

All this was done, and mass celebrated in seven different places. After this there was a sermon, which lasted an hour and a half; the monks and priests then came forward to confess, to shew their good hearts to God, and the people of the city, who were of Egypt, desired to look upon the ark through God's grace, were conducted by Moses and Aaron to the mountain of Pharaoh, and the



drowned: 'In like manner, my good people,' preached the monks, 'have you been kept in bondage by your lord, the earl of Flanders, and by your neighbours of Bruges, whom you are now to meet, and by whom you will, without doubt, be combated, for your enemies are in great numbers, and have little fear of your force; but do not you mind this; for God who can do all things, and is acquainted with your situation, will have mercy on you: therefore, think of nothing but what you have left behind; for you well know, that every thing is lost, if you be defeated. Sell yourselves well and valiantly; and if you must die, die with honour. Do not be alarmed, if great numbers issue forth from Bruges against you, for victory is not to the multitude, but whither God shall please to send it; and, by his grace, it has been often seen, as well by the Maccabees as the Romans, that those who fought manfully, and confided in God, discomfited the greater number. Besides, you have justice and reason on your side, in this quarrel, which ought to make you feel yourselves bold and better comforted.'

In such words as these, the priests had been ordered to preach to the army, and with these discourses they were well pleased. Three parts of them communicated, and all shewed great devotion and much fear in God.

After the sermons, the whole army assembled round a small hill, on which Philip von Artaveld placed himself, in order to be the better heard, and harangued them very ably, explaining to them every point in which they were justified in  
this

this war; and how Ghent had frequently fought pardon from the earl, and never could obtain it, without submitting to conditions too hard for the town and its inhabitants: that now they had advanced so far they could not retreat; and that, if they would consider, they would see nothing could be gained were they to return, for all they had left behind were in sorrow and misery. They ought not, therefore, to think of Ghent, their wives and children who were in it, but to act in such manner as was becoming their honour.

Philip von Artaveld addressed many more fine speeches to them; for he was very eloquent, and had words at command, which was fortunate for him, and towards the end he added; 'My good friends, you see here all your provision: divide it among you fairly, like brethren, without any disturbance; for when it is gone, you must conquer more, if you wish to live.'

At these words they drew up very regularly, and unloaded the carts, when the bags of bread were given out, to be divided by constablewicks, and the two tuns of wine placed on their bottoms; and there they moderately breakfasted, each man having a sufficiency at that time; after which breakfast they found themselves more determined and active on their feet, than if they had eaten more.

This repast being over, they put themselves in order, and retired within their ribaudeaus. These ribaudeaus are tall stakes, with points shod with iron, which they were always accustomed to carry

carry with them. They fixed them in front of their army, and inclosed themselves within.

The three knights who had been sent by the earl to reconnoitre, found them in this situation: they approached the entrances of these ribaudeaus; but the Ghent men never moved, and rather seemed rejoiced to see them.

They returned to Bruges, where they found the earl in his palace, surrounded by many knights, waiting for them, to hear what intelligence they had brought back. They pushed through the crowd, and came near the earl, when they spoke aloud, for the earl wished all present to hear, and said, 'they had advanced so close to the Ghent army, that they might have shot at them, if they had so chosen, but they left them in peace; and that they had seen their banners, and the army inclosed within their ribaudeaus.'

'And what are their numbers, think ye?' said the earl. They answered, 'that as near as they could guess, they might be from five to six thousand.' 'Well,' said the earl, 'now let every one instantly get ready; for I will give them battle, and this day shall not pass without a combat.' At these words the trumpet sounded in Bruges, when every one armed himself, and made for the market-place. As they came, they drew up under their proper banners, as they had usually done, in bands and constablewicks.

Many barons, knights and men at arms, drew up before the palace of the earl. When all was ready,

ready, and the earl armed, he came to the market place, and was much pleased to see such numbers in battle-array. They then marched off, for none dared disobey his commands; and, in order of battle, made for the plain: the men at arms afterwards issued forth from Bruges.

It was a handsome fight, for there were upwards of forty thousand armed heads; and thus horse and foot advanced in proper order, near to the place where the Ghent men were, and then halted. It was late in the afternoon when the earl and his army arrived, and the sun going down. One of the knights said to the earl; 'My lord, you now see your enemies: they are but a handful of men in comparison with your army, and as they cannot escape do not engage them this day; but wait for to-morrow, when you will have the day before you: you will, besides, have more light to see what you are about, and they will be weaker, for they have not any thing to eat.'

The earl approved much this advice, and would willingly have followed it; but the men of Bruges, impatient to begin the fight, would not wait, saying, they would soon defeat them and return back to their town.

Notwithstanding the orders of the men at arms, for the earl had not less than eight hundred lances, knights and squires, the Bruges men began to shoot and to fire cannons.

The Ghent men, being collected in a body on an eminence, fired at once three hundred cannon; after which they turned the marsh, and placed the  
Bruges

Bruges men with the sun in their eyes, which much distressed them, and then fell upon them, shouting out, 'Ghent!' The moment the men of Bruges heard the cannon and the cry of Ghent, and saw them marching to attack them in front, they, like cowards, opened their ranks, and letting the Ghent men pass without making any defence, flung down their staves and ran away.

The Ghent men were in close order, and, perceiving their enemies were defeated, began to knock down and kill on all sides. They advanced with a quick step, shouting, 'Ghent!' and saying, 'Let us pursue briskly our enemies, who are defeated, and enter the town with them: God eyes us this day with looks of pity.'

They followed those of Bruges with so much courage that, whenever they knocked down or killed any one, they marched on without halting or quitting the pursuit, whilst the men of Bruges fled with the haste of a defeated army. I must say, that at this place there were multitudes of slain, wounded and thrown down; for they made no defence, and never were such cowardly wretches as those of Bruges, or who more weakly or recreantly behaved themselves, after all their insolence when they first took the field. Some may wish to excuse them by supposing there might have been treason, which caused this defeat. This was not so; but such poor and weak conduct fell on their own heads.



## CHAP. XVII.

BRUGES IS TAKEN BY THE GHENT ARMY.—THE  
EARL OF FLANDERS SAVES HIMSELF IN THE  
HOUSE OF A POOR WOMAN.

WHEN the earl of Flanders and the men at arms saw that, by the miserable defence of the men of Bruges, they had caused their own defeat, and that there was not any remedy for it, for every man was running away as fast as he could, they were much surpris'd, and began to be alarmed for themselves, and to make off in different directions. It is true, that had they seen any probability of recovering the loss which the Bruges men were suffering, they would have done some deeds of arms, by which they might have rallied them a little: but they saw it was hopeless, for they were flying to Bruges in all directions, and neither the son waited for the father nor the father for his child.

The men at arms, therefore, began to break their ranks. Few had any desire to return to Bruges, for the crowd was so great on the road thither that it was painful to see and hear the complaints of the wounded and hurt. The men of Ghent were close at their heels, shouting out, 'Ghent, Ghent!' knocking down all that obstructed them. The greater part of these men at



arms had never before been in such peril: even the earl was advised to make for Bruges, and to have the gates closed and guarded, so that the Ghent men should not be able to force them and become masters of the town.

The earl of Flanders saw no help for his men, who were flying on all sides, and, as it was now dark night, followed this advice and took the road to Bruges, his banner displayed before him. He entered the gates one of the first, with about forty others, for no more had followed him. He ordered guards to defend the gates if the Ghent men should come thither, and then rode to his palace, from whence he issued a proclamation, that every person, under pain of death, should assemble in the market-place. The intention of the earl was to save the town by this means; but it did not succeed, as you shall hear.

While the earl was in his palace, and had sent the clerks of the different trades from street to street, to hasten the inhabitants to the market-place, in order to preserve the city, the men of Ghent, having closely pursued their enemies, entered the town with them, and instantly made for the market-place, without turning to the right or left, where they drew themselves up in array.

Sir Robert Marefchaut, one of the earl's knights, had been sent to the gates, to see they were guarded: but, while the earl was planning means for defending the town, sir Robert found a gate flung off its hinges, and the Ghent men masters of it. Some of the citizens said to him; ' Robert, Robert,

Robert, return and save yourself, if you can, for the Ghent men have taken the town.'

The knight returned as speedily as he could to the earl, whom he met coming out of his palace on horseback, with a number of torches. The knight told him what he had heard; but, notwithstanding this, the earl, anxious to defend the town, advanced toward the market-place, and as he was entering it with a number of torches, shouting out, 'Flanders for the Lyon! Flanders for the Earl!' those near his horse and about his person, seeing the place full of Ghent men, said,—'My lord, return; for if you advance further you will be slain, or at the best made prisoner by your enemies, as they are drawn up in the square and are waiting for you.'

They told him truth; for the Ghent men, seeing the great blaze of torches in the street, said, 'Here comes my lord, here comes the earl: how he falls into our hands!' Philip von Artaveld had given orders to his men, that if the earl should come, every care was to be taken to preserve him from harm, in order that he might be carried alive and in good health to Ghent, when they should be able to obtain what peace they chose.

The earl had entered the square, near to where the Ghent men were drawn up, when several people came to him and said,—'My lord, do not come further; for the Ghent men are masters of the market-place and of the town, and if you advance, you will run a risk of being taken.'

Numbers of them are now searching for their enemies from street to street, and many of the men of Bruges have joined them, who conduct them from Hôtel to Hôtel to seek those whom they want. You cannot pass any of the gates without danger of being killed, for they are in their possession; nor can you return to your palace, for a large rout of Ghent men have marched thither.'

When the earl heard this speech, which was heart-breaking as you may guess, he began to be much alarmed and to see the peril he was in. He resolved to follow the advice of not going further, and to save himself if he could, which was confirmed by his own judgment. He ordered the torches to be extinguished, and said to those about him,—‘I see clearly that affairs are without remedy: I therefore give permission for every one to depart and save himself in the best manner he can.’ His orders were obeyed. The torches were put out, and thrown in the streets; and all who were in company with the earl separated and went away. He himself went to a bye-street, where he was disarmed by his servant, and, throwing down his clothes, put on his servant's, saying,—‘Go about thy business, and save thyself if thou canst; but be silent if thou fall into the hands of my enemies; and if they ask thee any thing about me, do not give them any information.’ ‘My lord,’ replied the valet, ‘I will sooner die.’

The earl of Flanders thus remained alone, and it may be truly said he was in the greatest danger

ger; for it was over with him if he had at that hour, by any accident, fallen into the hands of the mob, who were going up and down the streets, searching every house for the friends of the earl; and whomsoever they found they carried before Philip von Artaveld and the other captains in the market-place, when they were instantly put to death. It was God alone who watched over him, and delivered him from this peril: for no one had ever before been in such imminent danger, as I shall presently relate.

The earl inwardly bewailed his situation from street to street at this late hour, for it was a little passed midnight, and he dared not enter any house, lest he should be seized by the mobs of Ghent and Bruges. Thus, as he was rambling through the streets, he at last entered the house of a poor woman, a very unfit habitation for such a lord, as there were neither halls nor apartments, but a small house, dirty and smoky, and as black as jet: there was only in this place, one poor chamber, over which was a sort of a garret that was entered by means of a ladder of seven steps, where, on a miserable bed, the children of this woman lay.

The earl entered this house with fear and trembling, and said to the woman, who was also much frightened,—‘Woman, save me: I am thy lord, the earl of Flanders; but at this moment I must hide myself for my enemies are in pursuit of me; and I will handsomely reward thee for the favour thou shewest me.’

The poor woman knew him well, for she had  
frequently

frequently received alms at his door; and had often seen him pass and repass, when he was going to some amusement, or hunting. She was ready with her answers, in which God assisted the earl: for had she delayed it ever so little, they would have found him in conversation with her by the fire-side. 'My lord, mount this ladder, and get under the bed in which my children sleep.' This he did, while she employed herself by the fire-side, with another child in a cradle.

The earl of Flanders mounted the ladder as quickly as he could, and, getting between the straw and the coverlid, hid himself, and contracted his body into as little space as possible. He had scarcely done so, when some of the mob of Ghent entered the house; for one of them had said, he had seen a man go in there. They found this woman sitting by the fire, nursing her child, of whom they demanded, 'Woman, where is the man we saw enter this house, and shut the door after him?' 'By my troth,' replied she, 'I have not seen any one enter here this night; but I have just been at the door to throw out some water, which I then shut after me; besides, I have not any place to hide him in, for you see the whole of this house: here is my bed, and my children sleep overhead.'

Upon this one of them took a candle, and mounted the ladder, and, thrusting his head into the place, saw nothing but the wretched bed in which the children were asleep. He looked all about him, above and below, and then said to his companions, 'Come, come, let us go: we only



only lose our time here: the poor woman speaks truth: there is not a soul but herself and her children.' On saying this, they left the house and went into another quarter; and no one afterwards entered it, who had bad intentions.

The earl of Flanders, hearing all this conversation as he lay hid, you may easily imagine, was in the greatest fear of his life. In the morning he could have said he was one of the most powerful princes in Christendom, and that same night he felt himself one of the smallest. One may truly say, that the fortunes of this world are not stable. It was fortunate for him to save his life; and this miraculous escape ought to be to him a remembrance his whole lifetime.

We will now leave the earl of Flanders, and speak of Bruges, and how the Ghent men prospered.

---

## CHAP. XVIII.

THE GHENT MEN SPARE THE FOREIGN MERCHANTS IN BRUGES.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS QUILTS BRUGES, AND RETURNS TO LILLE, WHITHER SOME OF HIS PEOPLE HAD ALREADY RETREATED.

**F**RANCIS Atremen was one of the principal leaders of the mob. He was ordered by Philip von Artaveld and Peter du Bois, to search the town of Bruges, and guard the market-place, until they should find themselves complete masters of the town. He was particularly commanded to  
suffer



suffer no harm to be done to foreign merchants, or other strangers then at Bruges, for they had nothing to do with their quarrels. This order was very well observed, and neither Francis nor any of his company did the smallest hurt to a foreigner.

The search of the Ghent men was especially directed to the four trades, of jerkin-makers, glassmen, butchers, and fishermen; for they had resolved to put to death all whom they should find of these different trades, because they had been partisans of the earl of Flanders at Oudenarde, and other places. They fought for them every where, and when they found any, they were killed without mercy.

There were upwards of twelve hundred, one with the other, slain this night; and many murders and robberies committed, which were never known: several houses robbed, and women and girls violated; coffers broken open, and a variety of wicked deeds done; insomuch, that the poorest of the Ghent army became very rich.

On the Monday morning the happy news, of the defeat of the earl and his army, was brought to Ghent; that their men had not only conquered them, but also the town of Bruges, of which they were now masters. You may guess the joy the people felt, who had been so lately in the greatest tribulation: they made many processions to the church to return thanksgivings to God for the mercy he had shewn them, and for the victory he had given to their army. Every day  
there

there came good news, which so much delighted them, they hardly knew what they were about. I mention this; for had the lord de Harzelles, who had remained in Ghent, marched that Sunday, or the Monday morning, with three or four thousand men to Oudenarde, he would instantly have conquered it: they were in such consternation at the success of the Ghent men, that they were on the point of quitting the town, to save themselves in Hainault, or elsewhere, and had made preparations for so doing. But when they perceived the Ghent people did not come, nor had any intelligence respecting them, they recovered their courage. The knights who were there, such as sir John Bernage, sir Thierry du Ban, and sir Fleuriant de Heurlée, guarded and comforted them, until the arrival of sir Damos de Haluin, who was sent thither by the earl, as I shall relate when I come to that period.

No people ever behaved themselves better towards their enemies than the men of Ghent did to those of Bruges, nor conducted themselves more graciously to a conquered town: they did no harm to any of the small tradesmen unless there were very strong accusations against them.

When Philip von Artaveld, Peter du Bois and the other captains saw they were completely masters of the place, they issued out a proclamation in their name for all persons to retire to their houses, and that no one should break open or pillage any house, nor be any way instrumental in raising of riots, under pain of death.

They then inquired what had become of the earl:

earl : some said, he had left the town on Saturday night : others that he was yet in Bruges, but so closely hid that he could not be found. The captains of the Ghent army paid no great attention to him; for they were so rejoiced at their victory that they thought nothing of any earl, baron or knight in Flanders, and looked on themselves as so mighty that all the world must obey them.

Philip von Artaveld and Peter du Bois considered, that when they had quitted Ghent they had left it destitute of all provision, for there was neither corn nor wine in the town : they instantly detached a large party to Damme and Sluys to gain those towns, and the provisions which were in them, in order to supply their fellow-citizens in Ghent.

On the detachment arriving at Damme, the gates were thrown open, and the town with all in it surrendered. They ordered out of the fine cellars the wines of Poitou, Gascony, and la Rochelle, and from other distant countries, to the amount of six thousand tuns, which they loaded on carriages and sent by land to Ghent, and also by boats on the river Lis.

They then marched on to Sluys, which instantly submitted to them and opened its gates. They found there great quantities of casks of corn and flour, in ships and in the storehouses of foreign merchants, and having paid for the whole, sent it by land and water to Ghent. Thus was Ghent delivered from famine, through the mercy of God. It could not have happened otherwise,

*Well ought the Ghent men to remember it ;*

for

for that God assisted them is very clear, when five thousand famished men defeated forty thousand, even before their own doors. They and their leaders ought to have humbled themselves; however they did not, but rather increased their pride, infomuch that God was angered with them, and punished their folly before the year was expired, as shall be related in the course of this history, for an example to the rest of the world.

I was informed, and believe my authority good, that on the Sunday evening, when it was dark, the earl of Flanders escaped from Bruges. I am ignorant how he accomplished it, or if he had any assistance, but some I believe he must have had. He got out of the town on foot, clad in a miserable jerkin, and when in the fields was quite joyous, as he might then say he had escaped from the utmost peril. He wandered a bout at first, and came to a thorn bush, to consider whither he should go; for he was unacquainted with the roads or country, having never before travelled on foot.

As he lay thus hid under the bush, he heard some one talk, who by accident was one of his knights, that had married a bastard daughter of his: his name was sir Robert Marefchaut. The earl, hearing him talk as he was passing, said to him, 'Robert, art thou there?' The knight, who well knew his voice, replied; 'My lord, you have this day given me great uneasiness in seeking for you all round Bruges: how were you able to escape?' 'Come, come, Robert,' said the earl: 'this is not a time to tell one's adventures: endea-

your

your to get me a horse, for I am tired with walking, and take the road to Lille, if thou knowest it.' 'My lord,' answered the knight, 'I know it well.' They then travelled all that night and the morrow until early morn, before they could procure a horse. The first beast they could find was a mare, belonging to a poor man in a village.

The earl mounted the mare, without saddle or bridle, and travelling all Monday, came, towards evening, to the castle of Lille, whither the greater part of his knights who had escaped from the battle of Bruges had retired. They had got off as well as they could; some on foot, others on horseback, but all did not follow this road: some went by water to Holland and Zealand, where they remained until they received better news.

Sir Guy de Guistelles was fortunate in getting into a good situation; for he found the count Guy de Blois in one of his towns in Zealand, who handsomely entertained him, and give him wherewithal to remount and equip himself again, retaining him with him as long as he chose to stay. In a similar manner were the discomfited knights remounted by those lords to whom they had fled: they took great compassion on them, which was but justice, for nobles and gentlemen ought to be assisted and comforted by each other.



## CHAP. XIX.

THE CONDUCT OF THE GHENT MEN AT BRUGES.  
—ALL THE TOWNS IN FLANDERS SURRENDER  
TO THEM EXCEPT OUDENARDE.

NEWS was spread through all countries of the defeat which the earl of Flanders and the city of Bruges had suffered from Ghent. Many were rejoiced at it, more particularly the common people. Those in the principal towns of Brabant and the bishoprick of Liege were so much connected with them that they were the more pleased, as it was partly their own concern. Those of Paris and Rouen were equally delighted, though they dared not shew it openly.

When pope Clement heard the news, he mused awhile and then said, that this defeat was a rod from God, to make the earl take warning, and that he had sent him this affliction, because he had rebelled against him.

Several great lords in France, and other countries, said, the earl was not much to be pitied if he suffered a little; for his presumption was such, that he neither valued nor loved any neighbouring lord, however great, neither king of France nor other, if not agreeable to him; on which account they felt the less for his distresses. Thus it  
falls



falls out; and as the proverb says, ‘On him to whom misfortune happens, every one turns his back.’

The town of Louvain, in particular, shewed great joy at the victory of Ghent, and the misfortunes of the earl; for they were quarrelling with the duke of Brabant, their lord, who was inclined to make war on them, and pull down their gates; but they thought he would do better to remain quiet. They publicly said in the town of Louvain, that if Ghent were as near to them as Brussels, they would be closely united.

All these speeches were carried to the duke and duchess of Brabant; but it behoved them to shut their eyes and ears, for it was not the moment to notice them.

The Ghent men, during their residence at Bruges, made many innovations. They resolved to level two gates and the walls, and to fill up the ditches with them, that the inhabitants might be disabled from rebelling. They also determined, when they marched away, to take with them five hundred of the principal citizens to Ghent, to keep the town in greater fear and subjection.

Whilst the leaders were thus employed in destroying the gates and walls, and filling the ditches, they sent detachments to Ypres, Courtray, Bergues, Cassel, Poperingue, Bourbourg, and to all the towns and castles, in Flanders, on the sea-coast, and dependant on Bruges, to place them under their obedience, and to bring or send the keys of the castles and towns, as a token of their submission. All obeyed; for none dared to op-  
pose

pose them: and, according to the summons, they waited on Philip von Artaveld, and Peter du Bois at Bruges. These two stiled themselves commanders in chief in their proclamations; but particularly Philip von Artaveld, who took the lead in the government of Flanders, and, during his residence at Bruges, kept the state of a prince. He had his minstrels daily to play before him at his dinners and suppers; and was served on plate, as if he had been earl of Flanders. Indeed he might well live in this magnificent manner, for he had possessed himself of all the plate, both gold and silver, that had belonged to the earl, as well as the jewels and furniture of his apartments, found in his palace at Bruges, whence nothing had been saved.

A detachment of the Ghent men was sent to Marle, a handsome house belonging to the earl, situated half a league from Bruges, where they committed all sorts of outrages. They destroyed the house, and broke the font at which the earl had been baptised; and, having laden on carts every thing that was precious, of gold, silver or jewels, sent them to Ghent. During a whole fortnight, there were upwards of two hundred carts daily going and returning from Bruges to Ghent with the immense pillage which Philip von Artaveld and the Ghent men had made by this conquest of Bruges; the value of which was so great, that it was difficult to estimate its worth.

When the Ghent men had done every thing they willed to the city of Bruges, they sent to  
Ghent

Ghent five hundred of its principal citizens, to remain there as hostages. Francis Atremen and Peter le Nuitre, escorted them with a thousand of their men. Peter du Bois remained governor of Bruges, until the walls, gates and ditches, were completely levelled. Then Philip von Artaveld departed, taking the road towards Ypres; where, on his arrival, he was met by all manner of persons, and received with as much honour as if he were their natural lord, who had come, for the first time, to view his inheritance.

All submitted to his obedience. He renewed the powers of the mayor and sheriffs, and established new laws. Then came those of the castles, beyond Ypres, Cassel, Bergues, Bourbourg, Furnes, Poperingue, who submitted to him, and swore allegiance and homage, as to their lord, the earl of Flanders.

When he had fully assured himself of their submission, and had remained eight days at Ypres, he departed, and went to Courtray, where he was received with great joy. He continued there five days, and sent his summons to the town of Oudenarde, ordering the citizens to come and submit themselves to him; for they risked much, seeing the whole country had turned to Ghent, while they alone remained behind. The messengers also told them plainly, that if they did not do as the others had done, they might depend on having the town instantly besieged; and that the siege would not be broken up until it were conquered, and all put to the sword.

When

When this summons was brought to Oudenarde, the governor, sir Damos de Halluin, was absent, and only the three knights before mentioned in the place. They replied, with warmth, 'That they were not to be frightened by the menaces of the son of a brewer of Metheglin; and that they would not, and could not, surrender, or any way diminish, the inheritance of their lord, the earl of Flanders, but would guard and defend it with their lives.' This was the answer the messengers carried back to Courtray.

---

## CHAP. XX.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD, ON HIS RETURN TO GHEENT, LIVES IN GREAT POMP.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS RESIDES IN LILLE.

WHEN Philip heard from the garrison of Oudenarde, that they neither cared for him nor for his menaces, he swore, that whatever it might cost the country of Flanders, he would not attend to any thing until he had taken and razed to the ground the town of Oudenarde. He was greatly enraged, and thought he might easily accomplish his threats; for all Flanders was inclined to serve him.

After a residence of six days at Courtray, where he renewed the laws, and received the homage and allegiance of every one, just as if

he had been earl of Flanders, he returned to Ghent. There came out a grand procession to meet him, and with such joy that the earl, their lord was never received so honourably. The people adored him as if he had been their god, because, through his advice, their town enjoyed such power and wealth. It is impossible to tell the vast quantities of valuables which came thither by land and water from Bruges, Damme and Sluys. The bread, which three weeks before was sold for an old groat, was now not worth more than four farthings. The wine which was at twenty-four groats, was now sold for two. All things were much cheaper at Ghent than at Tournay or Valenciennes.

Philip von Artaveld, like a great prince, kept a magnificent establishment of horses, and was as grand in his hôtel, as the earl of Flanders was at Lille. He had his officers throughout Flanders, such as bailiffs, governors, receivers and serjeants, who every week brought considerable sums to Ghent, where he kept his state, and was clothed in scarlet robes lined with furs, like the duke of Brabant or earl of Hainault. He had also his exchequer-chamber, where the money was paid, like to the earl; and he gave dinners and suppers to the ladies and damsels of Ghent, as the earl used to do; and, like him, was not more sparing of his money where his pleasures were concerned. When he wrote, he signed himself Philip von Artaveld, regent of Flanders.

During this time, the earl of Flanders, who resided



resided at Lille, had reason to be thoughtful, seeing that his country was more than ever in rebellion against him, and that from himself alone he had not any hopes of recovering it; for all the towns were so much connected with each other that they could never be separated but by a very superior force. The whole country no more spoke of him, nor acknowledged him for their lord, than if he had never existed. He now remembered his connection with the duke of Burgundy, who had married the lady Margaret his daughter, by whom he had two fine children. He said he was happy king Charles was dead, and that there was a young king in France under the guardianship of his uncle the duke of Burgundy, who would manage and govern him according to his inclinations. It will be therefore natural for the king of France, as I should suppose, to be enraged against my rebellious subjects; for he has good inclinations, and is desirous of signalising himself in arms. The duke of Burgundy will easily induce him to do so, when he explains to him their insolent pride, and that he is bound to assist his vassals when their subjects rebel.

But some imagine the king would not have interfered in the matter, if it had not been for the intrigues of the duke of Burgundy; for, if nothing had been done, he would have annexed Flanders to the crown of France by some means or other; for the earl of Flanders was not enough in his favour to induce him to exert himself in

his aid. We will, however drop at present this subject until the proper time come, and speak of the earl of Flanders' conduct in Lille.

After his late great discomfiture before Bruges, he learnt that sir Thierri du Ban, sir Fleurant du Hurlée and sir John Bernage, had entered Oudenarde, and kept possession of it during all the events which had followed the defeat at Bruges. He well knew that these knights were not in sufficient strength to oppose the force of Flanders, if they should lay siege to it, as it was expected they would instantly do. In order to reinforce and victual it, he called to him a knight, named sir Daniel de Haluyn\*, and said to him; 'Daniel, you will go to the town of Oudenarde: I appoint you its governor, and you shall take with you one hundred and fifty lances, good men at arms, one hundred cross-bows, and two hundred lusty varlets with pikes and shields. You will be careful of the garrison, for I give it loyally into your charge; and hasten to victual it with corn, oats, salted meats, and wines from our good friends and neighbours in the town of Tournay, who I trust will not fail us in this urgent necessity.'

'My lord,' replied the knight, 'your orders shall be obeyed; and I accept the guard of the town of Oudenarde, since it pleases you to command me.' No accident shall happen to it

---

\* Daniel de Haluyn. This must be the person whom he before calls Dames, and Damaux de Haluin.

through

through any fault of mine.' 'Daniel,' said the earl, 'you comfort me much by what you say.'

Upon this, sir Daniel de Haluyn took leave of the earl and went to Oudenarde, which he reinforced with good men at arms, victualled it again, and made every other necessary preparation.

---

## CHAP. XXI.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD AND THE GHENT MEN  
LAY SIEGE TO OUDENARDE.

**P**HILIP, who resided in Ghent, hearing that the garrison of Oudenarde had been reinforced with men at arms, said he would provide a remedy, for such things were not to be suffered: it was a disgrace to all Flanders that that town should continue thus disobedient. He declared he would lay siege to it, and never march away until he had destroyed it, and put to death all who should be found within, knights and others. He issued his summons through Flanders, for every one to be ready prepared before Oudenarde on the 9th day of June. None dared disobey this summons: those in the principal towns of Flanders, of the Franconate and of Bruges, made themselves ready, and came before Oudenarde, where they extended themselves in the fields, meadows and marshes thereabouts. Philip, by whose orders every thing was done, lived in great state before Oudenarde.

During

During this time, he laid a tax throughout Flanders of four groats on every fire, which were to be paid weekly, by all persons indiscriminately. Philip gained large sums by this tax, for no one was exempted. He had his serjeants in all parts of the country, who made both rich and poor pay it, whether they would or not.

It was said there were upwards of a hundred thousand men at this siege of Oudenarde. The Flemings drove into the river Scheld large stakes, so that no vessels could come from Tournay to Oudenarde, whilst they had in their army plenty of every thing necessary. They had halls for cloth, furs and merceries: every Saturday was the market, to which were brought from the adjacent villages all sorts of groceries, fruits, butter, milk, cheese, poultry, and other things. In their army there were taverns as plenty as at Brussels, where Rhenish wines, and those of France, Galrigaches\*, Malmseys and other foreign wines were sold cheap. Every one might go thither, and pass and repass, without peril; that is to say, those of Brabant, Hainault, Germany and of Liege, but not those of France.

When sir Daniel de Haluyn entered Oudenarde, he laid in all his preparations of stores and provision, which were equally divided among the garrison, each according to a fixed ration. All the horses were sent away, and the houses near the walls pulled down, and covered with earth,

---

\* Galrigaches,—a sort of strong white wine, or liqueur.



to guard against the cannon, of which the enemy had abundance. The women and children who remained (for many were sent away) were lodged in the churches and monasteries. No dog was left in the town, but all were killed and thrown into the river.

The garrison made many gallant sallies, both mornings and evenings, doing great execution to the army. There were among others two squires from Artois, brothers, called Lambert and Tristan de Lambres, who frequently performed very gallant deeds of arms, bringing back with them provisions from the enemy, whether they would or not, and even prisoners.

Thus they remained the whole summer. It was the intention of Philip and his council to continue until they should starve them out; for it would cost them too many men were they to attempt to carry it by storm. They with much labour placed on the hill of Oudenarde a prodigiously great engine, twenty feet wide and forty long, which they called a Mutton, to cast heavy stones and beams of timber into the town, and crush every thing they should fall on. They had also, the more to alarm the garrison, fired a bombarde of a very great size, which was fifty feet in length, and shot stones of an immense weight. When they fired off this bombarde, it might be heard five leagues off in the day-time, and ten at night. The report of it was so loud, that it seemed as if all the devils in hell had broken loose.

The



The Ghent men made likewise another engine, which they pointed against the town, to cast large bars of hot copper. With such machines, as cannons, bombardes, fows and muttons, did the Ghent army labour to annoy the garrison of Oudenarde. They, however, comforted each other as well as they could, and defended themselves against these attacks. They made sallies three or four times a-week, in which they gained more honour than disgrace, and also more profit than loss.

---

## CHAP. XXII.

A DETACHMENT OF THE GHENT ARMY FROM BEFORE OUDENARDE, IN OVERRUNNING THE LANDS OF THEIR LORD, BURN SOME VILLAGES ON THE FRONTIERS OF FRANCE, WHICH CAUSES A WAR BETWEEN THE KING OF FRANCE AND THEM.

**W**HILST the siege of Oudenarde was going forward, eleven hundred men left the army, with a determination to scour the country, and to ruin and destroy the houses of those knights who, having quitted Flanders, had established themselves, with their wives and families, in Hainault, Brabant, and in Artois. They accomplished their purpose; for this detachment committed great damage throughout Flanders, not leaving any house of a gentleman unburnt, or standing. They then came again to Marle, the

the house of the earl, and completely destroyed it. They found there the cradle in which he had been nursed, and the bathing tub in which he had been washed, both of which they entirely demolished. They pulled down the chapel, carrying away with them the bell to Bruges, where they met Peter du Bois, and Peter le Nuitre, who entertained them well, and told them they had performed good services.

When these men had refreshed themselves, they took the road to the bridge of Warneston, crossed the river Lis, and came before Lille, where they destroyed some windmills and set fire to other villages of Flanders. Upwards of four thousand of the inhabitants of Lille armed themselves, and sallied out on horseback and on foot, after these marauders, whom they soon overtook, slew many and seized others, who had afterwards their heads struck off in Lille; but, had they been well pursued, not one of them would have escaped. Notwithstanding this check, the detachment from the Ghent army entered the country of Tournay, where they did much mischief, and burnt the town of Sechlin, and some of the adjacent villages which belong to the kingdom of France. They then returned with a very considerable booty, to the siege of Oudenarde.

News was carried to the duke of Burgundy, at Bapaume in Artois, how the Ghent men had pillaged and burnt some villages in France. He instantly wrote an account of it to his sovereign, who

who at that time was at Compiègne, as well as to his brother the duke of Berry, to the duke of Bourbon, and to the king's council, that they might consider of it. The duke of Burgundy wished not the Flemings to have acted otherwise; for he thought it would be now necessary to call on the king for aid, otherwise his father-in-law, the earl of Flanders, would never regain his inheritance: besides, on every account, this war exasperated him most exceedingly, for he was, in right of his wife, the heir of Flanders.

The earl of Flanders resided at this moment at Hêdin. He there learnt that the Ghent men had destroyed his house at Marle, through spite to him, even the chamber wherein he was born, and had broken the font wherein he had been baptised, with the cradle of his childhood, which was of silver. The bathing tub wherein he had been washed was beaten to pieces and carried away. All this vexed him exceedingly. Whilst at Hêdin he thought of different plans: for he saw his country had turned against him, except Dendremonde and Oudenarde, and no succour to be looked for, but from France. Having weighed well all circumstances, he resolved to visit his son the duke of Burgundy, who lived at Bapaume, and explain to him his situation.

He departed from Hêdin and went to Arras, where he reposed himself two days. On the morrow he came to Bapaume, and dismounted at the hôtel of the counts of Artois, which was now his own; for, by the death of his lady-mother,

ther, he was count of Artois. The duke of Burgundy took much compassion on him, and comforted him kindly, when he had heard his complaints, saying, 'My lord, by the faith I owe to you, and to the king, I will not attend to any thing but the recovery of your country. You shall be repossessed, or we will lose the remainder; for it is not to be suffered that such a set of scoundrels as are now in Flanders should govern that country, as in that case all knight-hood and gentility may be destroyed and pulled down, and consequently all Christianity.'

The earl of Flanders was much consoled by the duke engaging to assist him. He took leave of him, and went to the city of Arras. At this time, he held in prison upwards of two hundred persons from the chief towns in Flanders, who had only bread and water for food; and every day they were threatened to lose their heads. When the earl returned to Arras, he gave them all their liberties, in honour of GOD and the Virgin; for he found, from what had passed in Flanders after their imprisonment, that they were not any way to blame. He made them all swear to be true and loyal to him, and then gave them money to carry them to Lille or Douay, or wherever else they pleased. The earl gained much popularity by this measure. He then left Arras, and returned to Hêdin.

## CHAP. XXIII,

THE DUKE OF BURGUNDY INSTIGATES HIS NE-  
PHEW KING CHARLES TO MAKE WAR ON GHENT  
AND ITS ALLIES, AS WELL IN REVENGE FOR  
THE BURNT VILLAGES AS TO ASSIST IN THE  
RECOVERY OF FLANDERS FOR THE EARL, WHO  
WAS HIS VASSAL.

**T**HE duke of Burgundy was not forgetful of the engagements he had entered into with his lord and father the earl of Flanders. He set out from Bapaume attended by sir Guy de la Trimouille and sir John de Vienne, admiral of France, who were very desirous the earl should be assisted. These two were the principal persons of his council. They continued their journey until they arrived at Senlis, where the king was with his two uncles of Berry and Bourbon. He was received with joy, and then was asked what was the news in Flanders, and how the siege of Oudenarde was going on. The duke of Burgundy made very prudent replies to these first questions of the king and his uncles; but when he found an opportunity, he drew his brother the duke of Berry aside, and explained to him how the Ghent men, in the insolence of their pride, were endeavouring to be masters every where and to destroy all gentlemen; that they had already burnt and pillaged part of the kingdom of France, which was much to the prejudice and dishonour of the realm, and ought not to be patiently borne.

‘ Fair



‘Fair brother,’ said the duke of Berry, ‘we will talk to the king on this subject: you and I are the principal of his council. The king being made a party, no one will attempt to thwart our inclinations in fomenting a war between France and Flanders, which have hitherto been at peace with each other: it will be proper we give some good reasons for it, and that the barons of France be of our opinion; otherwise we may be blamed and the fault thrown on us; for the king is young, and every one knows that he will do whatever we shall tell him or advise him. If it turn out successful, it will be passed over; but, should it be otherwise, we shall be charged with it, and much more blamed, and with reason, than any of the other counsellors. Every one will say, ‘See how badly the king’s uncles, the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, have advised the king; they have engaged the nation in a war in which it had nothing to do,’ I therefore say, my fair lord, that we must assemble the greater part of the prelates and nobles of the kingdom of France, and lay before them, in the presence of the king, who is personally interested in this business, all the events which bear any relation to the inheritance of Flanders: we shall then soon see what is the general wish of France.’

The duke of Burgundy replied, ‘You say well, my fair brother, and what you have advised shall be done.’ At these words, the king entered the apartments where his uncles were, with a falcon on his wrist: he was struck with the duke’s

last

last words; and said with much good humour, 'What were you speaking of, my fair uncles, at this moment with so much earnestness? I should like to hear it, if it be proper for me to know.' 'Yes, my lord,' answered the duke of Berry; 'for what we were discussing personally concerns you: Your uncle, my brother of Burgundy, has just been complaining to me of the Flemings: those villains of Flanders have driven the earl their lord out of his country, and all the gentlemen. They are now, to the amount of a hundred thousand men, besieging Oudenarde, under a captain called Philip von Artaveld, an Englishman for courage, who has sworn he will never break up the siege until he has had his will on those of the town, unless you shall force him to it. This reservation he has made. Now, what do you say to this? will you assist your cousin of Flanders to regain his inheritance, of which peasants, in their pride and cruelty have deprived him?'

'By my faith, my dear uncles,' replied the king, 'I have a very great inclination so to do, and in God's name let us march thither: I wish for nothing more than to try my strength in arms, for never hitherto have I had armour on. It is necessary, therefore, if I wish to reign with honour and glory, that I learn the art of war.'

The two dukes, looking at each other, were much delighted with what the king had said; and the duke of Berry added,—'My lord, you have very properly spoken, and you are bound

to

do what you say; for the country of Flanders is a dependance on the domain of France; and you have sworn, and we also for you, that you will support in their rights your vassals and liege men: the earl is also your cousin, you therefore owe him affection. Now, since you are in such good inclinations, do not change them, but say the same to all who shall speak to you on this subject; for we will assemble in haste the prelates and barons of your realm, and in your presence lay before them this business. Do you speak your mind then, as clearly and as loudly as you have done to us, and they all will say we have an enterprising and well-intentioned king.'

'On my faith, my fair uncle, I wish every thing were ready for us to march thither tomorrow; for from henceforward the greatest pleasure I shall have will be to abase the pride of these Flemings.'

The two dukes were well pleased at hearing the king thus speak out.

The duke of Bourbon now came, having been sent for by them; and they related to him all you have heard, and how eager the king was to march to Flanders, with which he was much pleased.

Things remained in this state. The king and his uncles wrote letters to all the lords of the council, ordering them to come to Compiègne on a certain day, when there would be a council held on the affairs of the realm. Every one obeyed, as  
was

was right; but the king was so much rejoiced at what he had heard, and so much occupied was his mind with this subject, that nothing could put it out of his head. He frequently said, 'The council would be too tedious to accomplish the business well; adding, that when any one wishes to perform an enterprise successfully, deliberations should not be too long; for at last the enemy gains information of it.' He also said, when they laid before him the dangers that might happen, 'Yes, yes; nothing venture, nothing gain.' In this manner did the young king of France converse with the knights and squires of his chamber. I will now relate to you a dream which he had at this time at Senlis; and from which he took a flying hart for his emblem, as I was then informed.

---

#### CHAP. XXIV.

CHARLES THE SIXTH, KING OF FRANCE, FROM A DREAM, CHOOSES A FLYING HART FOR HIS DEVICE.

**I**T happened that during the residence of the young king Charles at Senlis, as he was sleeping in his bed, a vision appeared to him. He thought he was in the city of Arras, where, until then, he had never been, attended by all the flower of knighthood of his kingdom; that the earl of Flanders came there to him, and placed on his wrist a most beautiful and elegant pilgrim-falcon, saying, 'My lord, in God's name, I give this falcon to you, for the best that was ever seen, the most indefatigable



defatigable hunter, and the most excellent striker of birds.' The king was much pleased with the present, and said, 'Fair cousin, I give you my thanks.' He then thought he turned to the constable of France, who was near him, and said, 'Sir Oliver, let you and I go to the plains, and try this elegant falcon which my cousin of Flanders has given me.' When the constable answered, 'Well, let us go.' Then each mounted their horses, and went into the fields, taking the falcon with them, where they found plenty of herons to fly him at. The king said, 'Constable, cast off the falcon, and we shall see how he will hunt.' The constable let him fly, and the falcon mounted so high in the air, they could scarcely see him: he took the direction towards Flanders. 'Let us ride after my bird,' said the king to the constable: 'for I will not lose him.' The constable assented, and they rode on, as it appeared to the king, through a large marsh, when they came to a wood, on which the king cried out, 'Dismount, dismount: we cannot pass this wood on horseback.' They then dismounted, when some servants came and took their horses. The king and the constable entered the wood with much difficulty, and walked on until they came to an extensive heath, where they saw the falcon chasing herons, and striking them down; but they resisted, and there was a battle between them. It seemed to the king that his falcon performed gallantly, and drove the birds before him so far, that he lost sight of him. This much vexed the king,



as well as the impossibility of following him; and he said to the constable, 'I shall lose my falcon, which I shall very much regret; for I have neither lure, nor any thing else to call him back.' Whilst the king was in this anxiety, he thought a beautiful hart, with two wings, appeared to issue out of the wood, and come to this heath and bend himself down before the king, who said to the constable, as he regarded this wonder with delight, 'Constable, do you remain here, and I will mount this hart that offers himself to me, and follow my bird.' The constable agreed to it, and the young king joyfully mounted the hart, and went seeking the falcon. The hart, like one well tutored to obey the king's pleasure, carried him over the tops of the highest trees, when he saw his falcon striking down such numbers of birds, that he marvelled how he could do it. It seemed to the king that when the falcon had sufficiently flown, and struck down enough of the herons, he called him back, and instantly, as if well taught, he perched on the king's wrist, when it seemed to him, that after he had taken the falcon by its lure, and given him his reward, the hart flew back again over the wood, and replaced the king on the same heath whence he had carried him, and where the constable was waiting, who was much rejoiced at his return. On his arrival he dismounted: the hart returned to the wood, and was no more seen. The king then, as he imagined, related to the constable how well the hart had carried him: that he had never rode so easy before

before in his life ; and also the goodness of his falcon, who had struck down such numbers of birds : to all which the constable willingly listened. The servants then seemed to come after them with their horses, which, having mounted, they followed a magnificent road that brought them back to Arras. The king at this part awakened, much astonished at the vision he had seen, which was so imprinted on his memory, that he told it to some of his attendants who were waiting in his chamber. The figure of this hart was so agreeable to him, that he could not put it out of his imagination ; and this was the cause why, on this expedition to Flanders against the Flemings, he took a flying hart for his device.

---

## CHAP. XXV.

DURING THE SIEGE OF OUDENARDE, THE REBELS ENTREAT KING CHARLES TO MAKE PEACE BETWEEN THEM AND THE EARL OF FLANDERS.—THE KING ANSWERS THEM WITH CONTEMPT.—THEY THEN ENDEAVOUR TO DRAW THE ENGLISH INTO AN ALLIANCE WITH THEM.

**P**HILIP von Artaveld, although he had been very successful at the battle of Bruges, and though fortune had smiled on him at his defeat of the earl and the citizens of Bruges, possessed not any abilities for war or sieges. When young he had not been educated for it, but in fishing

with a rod in the rivers Scheld and Lis; and he clearly proved his incapacity during the siege of Oudenarde. He knew not how to take the town, and, through pride and presumption, thought that it must be his, and that the inhabitants ought to come and surrender it to him. They had no such inclination; but behaved themselves like valorous men, skirmishing frequently with these Flemings at the barriers, in which they slew many and wounded more, and then retired without loss into their town.

In these sallies, Lambert de Lambres, Trifan his brother, and the lord de Lunelhiën, gained great renown.

The Flemings observing that the ditches of Oudenarde were wide and full of water, and that they could not approach the place but with great peril, resolved in counsel to collect quantities of faggots and straw to fill them up, to enable them to come near the walls and engage hand to hand. As it had been ordered, so it was executed; but the garrison held what they were about cheap, and said, that if there were no treason between them and the townspeople, they were not alarmed for the event of the siege. However, sir Daniel de Halwyn, the governor, to prevent any misconduct, had kept the citizens so much under command that they had not any power whatever: and he had strictly ordered, that none of the inhabitants should dare to ascend the walls, by day or night, without being accompanied by some of the men at arms, otherwise, if found, they would risk the loss of their lives.

In

In this manner was the siege continued. The Flemings had plenty of provision in their army, which was brought to them by sea and land, as well as down the rivers, for they were lords of the whole of Flanders. They were also near the countries of Holland, Zealand, Brabant, and a part of Hainault, the inhabitants of which, through avarice of gain, privately brought their army provision in quantities.

This Philip von Artaveld had a courage more like English than French. He would have been glad if they had adhered more to the former, and made an alliance with England; for, should the king of France, or duke of Burgundy, march an army against them to recover the country, they would have been assisted. Philip had already in his army two hundred English archers, who had stolen away from their garrison at Calais, and were paid every week.

Philip, to put a better colour on his actions, and to know what they said of him in France, resolved to send letters from himself and from the country of Flanders, to the king of France, humbly entreating the king to take the trouble of bringing about a sound reconciliation between them and the earl their lord. He had no sooner mentioned this idea than it was executed: he wrote amicable letters to the king of France and to his council, which he ordered a messenger to carry to France and deliver to the king. The messenger said he would willingly obey, and rode on with the letters until he came to  
Senlis,

Senlis, where the king was, to whom and to his uncles he gave the letters.

The king took them, and had them read in the presence of his uncles and council. After they had been read and comprehended, the auditors burst out into laughter. The messenger, because he had come into the king's presence without a passport, was ordered to be arrested and put into prison, where he remained for upwards of three weeks.

When Philip heard of this, he was very indignant, and, having summoned the captains of the army to him, he said,—‘ You see what honour the king of France pays to us, after we have so amicably written to him, for which he detains our messenger. We certainly make too many difficulties in connecting ourselves with the English, and, may suffer for it. The duke of Burgundy is now in France and governs the king just as he pleases, for he is but a child. Do you think that he will leave things in their present situation? Certainly not. Take for example our messenger, whom he has detained. It will therefore be prudent in us to send to England, as well for the general good of Flanders as to secure ourselves and alarm our enemies. I am desirous,’ said Philip, ‘ that we send thither ten or twelve of our principle men, that the knowledge of it may be carried to France, and that the king and his council may think we intend to unite ourselves with his adversary the king of England. But I do not  
with



with such alliances to be made in a hurry, nor at all if we were not thus circumstanced; but I would that our ambassadors should demand privately, of the king of England and his council, the sum of two hundred thousand old crowns, which we have a just right to, and which Jacob von Artaveld, my father, and the states of Flanders, lent to the king of England when before Tournay, to pay his troops. Let them also tell the king of England, his uncles and his counsellors, that the states of Flanders in general, and the chief towns who made this loan, demand the repayment of it; and that when this shall have been done, which the king of England is obliged to perform, he and his subjects shall have free entry into Flanders for the time to come. It is much better,' added Philip, 'that we make use of what is our own than that foreigners should do so; and we never can have a better opportunity than now to get it back again, for the king and realm of England will not hesitate to gain the entry, love and alliance of such a country as Flanders now is: besides, the English have not in the whole coast from Bourdeaux to Sluys any port, except Calais, Cherbourg and Brest, to gain entrance into France. Flanders, therefore, will open her ports to them very opportunely; for Brittany, excepting Brest, is quite shut against them, and the duke of Brittany has sworn to be a true Frenchman, which, if he were not, he would so become, through love to his cousin-german the earl of Flanders.'

All who heard him answered, that he had well and wisely spoken, and what he had proposed should be followed; and that whoever was of the contrary opinion was not a wellwisher to the prosperity of Flanders.

Philip did not delay executing it: he wrote on this subject to Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuijtre, governors of Bruges, and also to those of Ypres and Courtray, who agreed to his proposal. One or two citizens were chosen from the principal towns, but from Ghent six. Among the first were Francis Atremen, Rasse de la Verdelle, Louis de Vaux, sir John Stotelare, Martin Blondel-Vatre, Jacob Bernare and a clerk who had been nominated bishop of Ghent by pope Urban. Master John d'Albret, who had been dean of the church of our Lady at Tournay, had proposed to make a bishoprick of the town of Ghent, which should enjoy the profits the bishop of Tournay ought to have.

When the twelve citizens had received their full instructions as to what they were to say and do, they took leave of their friends, departed from the siege of Oudenarde, and continued their journey until they arrived at Calais. Sir John d'Albrenes\*, the governor, received them very politely, when he understood they wanted to go to England, and provided them with ships and passage-boats. They remained there only three days, when they embarked, landed at Dover, and pursued their road to London.

---

\* Sir John d'Albrenes. Q.

At the time this embassy from Flanders arrived at London, the king of England with his council, sir John Montague, sir John Burley and sir William Beauchamp, were at Westminster, occupied in the investing sir Perducas d'Albreth with the whole barony of Chaumont in Gascony, which had reverted to the king, for him to do with it as he pleased; and I will tell you how this happened.

King Edward, in former times, had given it to sir John Chandos, who had held it as long as he lived: after his death, he had given it to sir Thomas Felton. Now sir Thomas was lately dead, and the barony had reverted to the king of England. It was improper it should long remain without a lord who would reside on the spot; for it joined the lands of the lord d'Albreth, who at that period was a loyal Frenchman. The king's council considered that sir Perducas d'Albreth, having faithfully served the kings of England, Edward, Richard, and the prince, as well as the country of the Bourdelois for upwards of thirty years, was well deserving to have this estate, which he would defend against any one.

Sir Perducas d'Albreth, on receiving the investiture of the lands of Chaumont from the hands of the king, in the presence of the nobles of England, thus addressed his majesty: 'Sire, I take and receive this inheritance for myself and for my heirs, on condition that I and my heir faithfully serve you against all mankind, except against the house of Albreth; for against that

that whence I am sprung, I will never make war as long as my inheritance is left in peace.'

The king and his council replied,—'In God's name be it so;' and on these terms he was invested.

I will now relate what befel this sir Perducas d'Albreth. When he was returning to Gascony to take possession of his estate, and the sénéchal of Bourdeaux had given him seisin of the barony, the lord d'Albreth was much rejoiced: for he knew his cousin would not make war upon him, and that the lands of Albreth and of Chaumont would remain in quiet. The lord d'Albreth shewed much affection to his cousin, for he expected that after his decease he would be put in possession of such of his castles as were in the barony of Chaumont. But Perducas had not any such intentions. It chanced that he fell sick; and, when he was lying on his death-bed and saw there were no hopes of recovery, he summoned all his vassals, and calling to him a young squire and good man at arms, named Perduch\*, said to him; 'I transfer to thee, in the presence of my vassals, my whole estate of Chaumont. Be therefore a true Englishman, and loyal to the king of England. But I will not that against the house of Albreth, whence we are sprung, thou shouldest ever make war, unless they commit outrages against thee.' The squire cheerfully answered, 'Sir, I willingly accept it on these terms.' Thus was Perduch d'Albreth lord of Chaumont in Gascony. Sir Perducas died soon after, which is all I know about it.

---

\* Sala calls him 'Verduret de la Breth his nephew.'



## CHAP. XXVI.

THE AMBASSADORS FROM GHENT FAIL IN FORM-  
ING AN ALLIANCE WITH ENGLAND.

WHEN these Ghent men were come to London, their arrival was soon known, and information of it carried to the king and his council, who sent to them to know what they wanted. They came in a body to the palace of Westminster, where they were met first by the duke of Lancaster, the earl of Buckingham, the earl of Salisbury and the greater part of the council; but the king was not present at this first interview. These ambassadors having made their obeisances to the English lords, the bishop elect of Ghent spoke for them all, saying, 'My lords, we are come hither by orders from the town of Ghent, and from all Flanders, to request counsel, comfort, and assistance from the king of England, on account of certain articles, and for reason of ancient alliances which subsisted between England and Flanders. We wish to renew them, as the country of Flanders now stands in need of assistance, being at this moment without a lord. The principal towns and the country have chosen a regent, named Philip von Artaveld, who recommends himself particularly to the king, and to you all who are of his council. He entreats you to receive this commendation in good part; for if  
the



the king shall wish to come into Flanders he will find all its ports open, and the country well disposed towards him, where he may repose and refresh himself and people as long a time as he shall please; and he may call upon Flanders for one hundred thousand men, all armed. We are also ordered to request from you the two hundred thousand old crowns\* which Jacob von Artaveld, and the chief towns of Flanders, formerly lent to king Edward, of good memory, at the sieges of Tournay and of Calais, and which they now desire may be paid back. It is the intention of the principal towns in Flanders, that before any thing further be done in a treaty of alliance, this sum be paid down, by which means the king of England, and all his subjects, may say they are friends to the Flemings; and they shall have free entrance, at their pleasure, into Flanders.'

When the lords had heard this speech and demand, they looked at each other, and some began to smile. The duke of Lancaster, addressing them, said, 'My fair lords of Flanders, what you have said requires counsel. Go and return to London, and the king will consider your requests, and send you such answers as you shall be contented with.' The Ghent men replied, 'God will it be so.' They then quitted the council chamber, leaving the lords of the council behind, who began to laugh among themselves, and say, 'Did you notice these Flemings,

---

\* Old crowns, — each worth seven shillings and twopence.

and hear the request they made? They ask assistance, saying, they are in very great want of it, and, besides, demand our money. It is by no means reasonable that we should pay, and assist them into the bargain.' They looked on the Flemings as proud and presumptuous, in thus demanding a debt of two hundred thousand old crowns of so very ancient a date as forty years.

Nothing could have happened more opportunely for the king of France, who was eager to invade Flanders; for if the Flemings had been silent respecting these crowns, and had only requested assistance from the king of England, he would have gone in person to Flanders, or would have sent thither such a powerful force, that the Flemings who were in the field might have resisted the greatest power on the earth. But it fell out otherwise, as you will hear related in this history.

---

## CHAP XXVII.

THE MESSENGER WHICH THE GHENT MEN HAD SENT TO KING CHARLES OF FRANCE IS DELIVERED FROM PRISON.—SOME PRISONERS FROM TOURNAY AND COURTRAY ARE EXCHANGED FOR EACH OTHER.

**I**NTELLIGENCE was carried to the king's council in France, that Philip von Artaveld, and the country of Flanders, had sent ambassadors to England to form an alliance. And it was

commonly reported that the king of England, with a large army, was about to come this season to Flanders, and that he would fix its quarters at Ghent. This news was very probable, for it was to be supposed the Flemings would strengthen themselves by some means or other.

It was then thought proper to liberate the messenger of Philip. Indeed, to say the truth, they had not any right to imprison him. He was therefore set at liberty, and sent to Oudenarde where the army lay.

At this time the citizens of Bruges had seized and imprisoned some from Tournay. The Flemings shewed by this that they were indifferent as to war or peace with the French. Those of Tournay in return, captured some citizens of Courtray, whom they carried away prisoners to their town. Thus was the hatred increased between the men of Tournay and the Flemings.

The lords of Tournay, however, who wished not to make war on the Flemings, their neighbours, on their own account, without receiving orders from the king of France, resolved to send two of their citizens to Philip von Artaveld to make up matters between them, so that they might recover their townsmen who were prisoners, and render back, in exchange, those whom they had taken. John Bon Enfant and John Picard were chosen to go on this business. They went to the siege before Oudenarde, and spoke with Philip, who, in honour of the city of Tournay, and not out of any respect to the king of France, as he told them, received them  
very

very amicably : for the king had not used him nor the country of Flanders well, when he had imprisoned a messenger whom he had sent to him on friendly terms.

‘ Sir,’ replied the two citizens, ‘ you have received back your messenger.’ ‘ That is true,’ said Philip ; ‘ but it was more through fear than otherwise. Now tell me,’ added Philip, ‘ what business has brought you hither ? ’ ‘ Sir,’ answered the citizens, ‘ it is to have back our townsmen who are imprisoned at Bruges.’ ‘ Ha,’ replied Philip, ‘ if they are detained, you have also imprisoned some from Courtray. You must not lose any thing for this journey, so do you return our men, and you shall have yours.’

The men from Tournay answered, ‘ You say well, and we will cheerfully consent to it.’ The agreement was instantly made, and Philip von Artaveld wrote to Peter du Bois and to Peter le Nuitre, who resided in Bruges, to deliver up the citizens of Tournay whom they had thrown into prison ; and that they would have in exchange those who had been detained from Courtray ; for he declared the city of Tournay had written to request it.

When they took their leave, Philip thus spoke to them,—‘ Gentlemen, mind my words : I do not wish to betray you ; you are from the town of Tournay, which is a dependance on the king of France, with whom we will not enter into any treaty, until Dendremonde and Oudenarde shall be surrendered to us. Do not therefore come hither again, for those who do will be detained

tained. Advise your countrymen and merchants not to pass through Flanders; for we well know, that the king of France, your lord, will make war on us, for which we are prepared.

These citizens of Tournay, after having heard this speech, returned to Tournay to relate all that had passed. A proclamation was made, that no one should have any intercourse or dealings with the Flemings, without incurring the indignation of the king. The citizens of Tournay, who had been imprisoned at Bruges, returned; and those from Courtray were sent back. They dared not deal openly with the Flemings; but, when they wanted any merchandise from Flanders, they applied to Valenciennes; for those of Brabant, Holland, Hainault, Zealand and Liege, might travel and carry on their commerce through all Flanders with perfect security.

The siege of Oudenarde still went on in the same manner. Philip and his Ghent men were encamped on the hill of Oudenarde, on the side of Hainault, where they had planted bombards, cannons, and large machines, which made such a noise when fired that they could be heard upwards of six leagues. Near them, but below, on the banks of the Scheld, were encamped those from Bruges, as you ascend the river by the gate of Bruges. Those of Poperingue, Ypres, Cassel and the Franconate, were quartered near them, so that they surrounded the town completely.

Oudenarde



Oudenarde being thus furrounded, the Flemings thought they should starve those within it; but the garrison made frequent sallies, in which sometimes they gained the advantage, and at others lost it, as in such cases must happen. However, there were not any attempts made to storm it. Philip would not rashly risk the lives of his men, and said he would have it otherwise than by storm; and that it could not hold out much longer, since there was not a possibility of its being reinforced. A bird could scarcely fly into Oudenarde without being seen by the besieging army, so completely was it invested on all sides.

---

## CHAP. XXVIII.

KING CHARLES ORDERS COMMISSIONERS TO ENTER INTO CERTAIN TREATIES WITH THE FLEMINGS.—THEIR MESSENGERS ARE IMPRISONED AT THE MOMENT THEY DEMANDED PASSPORTS.

WE will now return to the king of France. His uncles and council thought it prudent to send to Tournay some knights and prelates of the realm to treat with the Flemings, and to learn more clearly their intentions. They therefore ordered sir Milles de Dormans bishop of Beauvis, the bishop of Auxerre, the bishop of Laon, sir Guy de Harcourt and sir Tristan du Bois, to Tournay as commissioners from the

VOL. VI. L king

king of France, where they found John Bon Enfant and John Picard, just returned from the siege of Oudenarde. They told these commissioners that Philip von Artaveld had declared to them, on taking leave, that the Flemings would never enter into any treaty until Oudenarde and Dendremonde were in their power.

‘Well,’ replied the commissioners, ‘Philip, with all his pride and presumption, of which he has enough, is not master of all the great towns in Flanders. We will therefore write to Ghent, Bruges, and Ypres, and send to each town letters by a messenger. We must enter on this business by some means or other.’

The commissioners wrote letters to the three principal towns in Flanders, and directed them to Philip von Artaveld as the chief leader. These letters contained as follows:

‘To Philip von Artaveld and his companions, and to the good people of the three towns of Flanders and the Franconate of Bruges. May it please you to know, that the king of France has sent us hither with the good intentions of establishing a peace, as lord paramount, between the noble lord of Flanders, his cousin, and the commonalty of Flanders. Public report says, that you seek to form an alliance with the king of England and the English; which will be unreasonable, and prejudicial to the kingdom of France, and which the king declares he will not suffer. We therefore entreat you, in the king’s name, to send us passports, that we may endeavour to bring this peace to a good and solid conclusion, for which the king will

will thank you. You will write us word, what are your intentions, and may the Lord keep you. Written at Tournay the sixteenth day of the month of October' (1382.)

When these three letters, which contained the same words, were written and sealed, they gave them to three men, to carry to Ghent, to Bruges and to Ypres, and to bring back the answers. They replied, they would bring back an answer, if they could get one, and then departed, each following the road to the town he was sent to.

By accident, Philip happened to be at Ghent the day the messenger arrived with his letter; for otherwise those of Ghent would not have opened it in his absence. When he had read it, he did nothing but laugh, and set out soon after from Ghent, on his return to Oudenarde, carrying the letter with him; but the messenger remained in prison at Ghent.

When arrived at Oudenarde, he called to him the lord de Harzelles and others of his companions: having read to them the letter from the commissioners, he said,—‘I think these French people wish to make a mockery of me and the country of Flanders. I told the citizens of Tournay, when they were here the day before yesterday, that I would not listen to any proposals from France, nor enter into any treaty which they might offer, until Oudenarde and Dendremonde were surrendered to us.’ At these words, news came from the governors of Bruges and Ypres, that they had also received letters,

and that the messengers who had brought these letters were detained and lodged in the town prisons. 'This is well done,' continued Philip. He then examined the letters for a while, and said he would write himself to the French commissioners. He did so, in consequence, and addressed them, 'To the very noble and discreet lords the commissioners from France.'

---

## CHAP. XXIX.

THE ANSWER OF PHILIP VON ARTAVELD TO  
THE FRENCH COMMISSIONERS, WHICH HE  
SENT BY A PRISONER OF WAR FROM OUDE-  
NARDE.

**V**ERY dear and potent lords, may it please you, in your noble discretion, to know that we have received very amicably the letters sent to us by the most excellent lord Charles king of France, informing us that your very noble lordships are come by his orders into these parts, to negotiate a peace between us and the most noble prince my lord of Flanders and the country of Flanders, and that the king aforesaid and his council have authority to bring it to a conclusion, as the citizens of Tournay, o dear and good friends, testify to us by letters patent which we have seen. Now, since the king writes to us, that he is much displeased that these discords have so long continued and  
still



still exist, we are much surpris'd that he should treat them so lightly, as in former times, when the town of Ghent had besieged that of Oudenarde, we, by the unanimous consent of the three great towns of Flanders, wrote to him, as to our sovereign lord, to request that he would make peace with us; but at that time he did not seem so willing to do what at this moment he is so desirous of.

‘ We have also received letters patent to say, that twice you have written to us, and that you have come twice hither commissioned by the king aforesaid, as is declared in these letters patent. But it seems to us, that in our answers, which we have sent, we have clearly explained our intention respecting a treaty, which is, that we are resolv'd no treaty shall be entered into by us and the country of Flanders, until those towns and fortresses which are shut against the towns and country of Flanders, and particularly and expressly against the good town of Ghent, of which we are regent, shall be thrown open to the will of us the regent and the good town of Ghent; and, if this be not done as a preliminary, we shall not treat in the manner you request. For it seems to us, that the king, according to you, means to assemble a large army to assist his cousin our lord. We know and feel that there are double dealings going forwards at this time, as was the case formerly. Our intention therefore is, to be on sure ground and prepared for our defence; for, if it should fall out as we expect, he will find

our



our army ready to defend us against our enemies; and we hope, through God's assistance, to be as fortunate as formerly in gaining a victory.

‘With regard to what you say of public rumour, that we, or some of our countrymen, have fought an alliance with the king of England, and that we are to be aided from thence; it is a truth that we are subjects of the crown of France, and that the king is our lord paramount, to whom we are bounden in allegiance. This we ever have performed. And even in these last days we sent him our letters, as to our sovereign lord, to entreat he would conclude a peace, to which he not only made no reply, but detained and imprisoned our messenger. This seems to us a blameable conduct in such a lord, and still greater in him, for we wrote to him as to our lord paramount, and he never condescended to send us any answer. Since therefore he has thus acted, we thought ourselves justified in seeking advantage for the country of Flanders from whatever persons we pleased, which has been the cause of the embassy to England, but nothing hitherto has been concluded. The king may not therefore be too late, provided all the strong places shall be laid open to us. Notwithstanding, we had forbidden those of Tournay, the last time they came to our army, in future to dare to carry any letters or verbal message, without proper passports; yet letters and messages have been carried to Bruges and Ghent; for which reason we have imprisoned the messengers, and we will teach them not to carry

carry such letters, that others may take warning from their example. We know well that you are seeking to sow dissensions among us, and especially against me, Philip von Artaveld, (whom God guard and preserve) and that you wish to stir up treason where at this moment there is peace. We therefore warn you not to continue such practices, until the before mentioned towns be opened unto us, which, with God's help, they shall shortly be, and to whose protection we commend you.

'Written before Oudenarde the 20th day of October, in the year 1382, Philip von Artaveld regent of Flanders.'

When Philip had written the above, in the presence of his council, they thought it could not be amended, and sealed it. They then considered to whom they should give it to carry. Philip asked, 'Have we no prisoners from Oudenarde?' 'Yes,' they replied, 'we have a varlet who was taken yesterday in a skirmish, who is from Artois.' 'Send for him hither.' On his coming, Philip said, 'Thou art my prisoner, and I may, if I choose, put thee instantly to death, but thou hast had a narrow escape; for since thou art here thou shalt have thy liberty, on condition that thou pledge thy troth to carry these letters to Tournay, and deliver them into the hands of the king's counsellors whom thou wilt find there.'

The varlet was never so happy in his life as when he was promised his liberty, for he considered his death as certain, and replied, 'I swear,

my

my lord, on my troth, that I will carry them whithersoever you please, were it to hell.' Philip, bursting out into laughter, said, 'Thou hast well spoken.' He ordered two crowns to be given to him, and had him escorted out of the camp, and put in the road to Tournay.

When he arrived at Tournay they shewed him the hôtel of the bishop of Laon, whither he went, and falling on his knees, punctually delivered his message to the bishop. They asked him news of Oudenarde and of the besieging army, when he told them all he knew. He was invited to dinner, and was, during dinner-time, closely questioned by the attendants of the bishop. The bishop of Laon went away, being unwilling to open the letters without his companions. When the three bishops and the knights were assembled they opened the letters, read them attentively, and considered them maturely. They then delivered their sentiments, saying; 'This Philip von Artaveld seemeth full of pride and presumption, and little loves the royal majesty of France.' Having consulted together, they added; 'The provosts, jurats and council of Tournay know that we have sent to Philip and the towns of Flanders: it is just they should learn the answer Philip has sent us.'

They sent for the provost, had the town-hall opened, and sounded the bell which called the council together. When they were all assembled, they read to them the letters they had received. The wisest were astonished at the presumptuous expressions they contained. It was resolved

resolved that copies of these letters should remain at Tournay. The council then broke up, and every man returned to his home.

---

## CHAP. XXX.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD WRITES AFFECTEDLY  
CIVIL LETTERS TO TOURNAY.—THE FRENCH  
COMMISSIONERS RETURN TO THE KING.

**P**HILIP continued with the army before Oudenarde, as you have before heard. He did not repent having sent such harsh and pointed answers to the commissioners of the king of France, but was sorry he had not written cajoling letters of civility to the provost and jurats of Tournay, pretending to shew them honour, though he had very little respect for them; for he was not willing to increase the hatred and ill will they bore him.

Philip therefore wrote in manner and form following: the superscription was, ‘To our honourable, wise and good friends, the provosts and jurats of the good town of Tournay.

‘Very dear and good friends, may it please you to know that we have received your letters, wherein mention is made of the two citizens of your town, ill intentioned carriers of letters to Ghent and Bruges, from the commissioners of the king of France, who have been arrested and detained by us, and whom you entreat to  
be

be set at liberty ; by which means the love and affection (which, through God's grace, subsists between us) may be continued uninterrupted between you and the country of Flanders. This love, very dear friends, does not appear to us to be very great : for we have received information that the king of France, the dukes of Burgundy and Brittany are assembling their forces to come to the assistance of my lord, the earl, against the country of Flanders, to regain that country, and to fight with us, notwithstanding the letters which they have sent us to treat of peace and concord, which to us does not seem to be a conduct becoming such persons ; and for which reason we are upon our guard, and shall continue so henceforth day and night. With respect to the prisoners, your townsmen, we shall detain them until we know for a certainty the truth of this assembling of forces, and until it shall please us to set them at liberty. You know, that when your citizens were lately in Flanders seeking peace, it was then ordered that no person whatever should bring messages or letters without a proper passport. This however is what the lords commissioners, being with you, have done, in order to excite discord and dissensions in the country. We therefore entreat of you, dear friends, that you will not in future send any of your citizens or townsmen to Flanders by order of these commissioners. But if there should be any thing that we can do, affecting your town or its citizens, we will attend to it in the same manner as we should



should wish our affairs might be attended to by you, in whom we have the greatest confidence, such as good neighbours ought to have for one another. And it is the general intention of all Flanders, that merchants and merchandise pass safely from country to country, without suffering the smallest injury. May God take you into his holy keeping !

‘ Written at our army the 22d day of October, in the year 1382, Philip von Artaveld regent of Flanders.’

Three days after the first letter had been sent to the commissioners from France, and while these lords were assembled in council in the hall, this second letter was brought by a varlet from Douay, who said, that those who were before Oudenarde had sent it to them. It was carried to the hall where the commissioners were, and read and considered at leisure. At length the commissioners replied to those of Tournay, who requested their advice on the occasion ; ‘ Gentlemen, we would advise you not to have any acquaintance or dealings with the Flemings, for you will not be thanked for it in France. Neither receive nor open any letters which may come from them ; for, if it should be known in the king’s council that you do so, you will be blamed, and suffer for it. Affairs will not long remain in the state they are now in.’ Those of Tournay answered, ‘ They would follow this advice, and, if it pleased God, they would never do any thing to deserve a reprimand.’

The French commissioners staid but three  
days

days longer at Tournay, when they set out on their return to the king, whom they found at Peronne, and his three uncles, the dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon with him.

---



---

## CHAP. XXXI.

KING CHARLES, AFTER HEARING THE REPORT OF HIS COMMISSIONERS, AT THE INSTIGATION OF THE EARL OF FLANDERS WHO WAS PRESENT, ASSEMBLES HIS ARMY IN ARTOIS, AGAINST THE FLEMINGS.—PHILIP VON ARTAVELD GUARDS THE PASSES INTO FLANDERS.

**T**HE day before the return of the commissioner, the earl of Flanders arrived at Peronne, to lay his affairs before the king and council, and to do homage for the county of Artois, which he was bounden to do and had not performed since the decease of his mother, who had died this year. On the arrival of the commissioners, the council was assembled in the presence of the young king, when the letters before mentioned were read; that of Philip to them, and the one he had sent to Tournay. They considered them in an unfavourable light, and declared that such pride and presumption in Flanders ought not to be suffered.

The earl of Flanders was not, as may be supposed, displeased on hearing this: he therefore laid his grievances before the king and council very opportunely, when they were heard and attended

attended to with pleasure. The king was advised to make the following answer: 'Earl of Flanders, you will return to Artois; and in a short time we will ourself be at Arras; where you will perform your duty in the presence of the peers of France. I cannot better shew you that I make the quarrel my own, than by my intention to march against our enemies.'

The earl was satisfied with this answer. Three days afterwards, he left Peronne, and, returning towards Artois, came to Hêdin. But the king of France, like one who was desirous of marching to Flanders to abase the pride of the Flemings, as his predecessors had formerly done, set his secretaries at work, and sent his letters and summons by messengers to all parts of his kingdom, ordering every one to hasten to Arras without delay, accoutred each, according to his rank, in the best manner he was able; for, if it were God's pleasure, he was determined to fight the Flemings in their own country.

No lord of his realm disobeyed, but all sent orders to their vassals, and marched from the most distant countries, such as Auvergne, Rouergue, Toulousain, Gascony, Poitou, Limousin, Saintonge and Brittany: others came from the Bourbonnois, Forêts, Burgundy, Dauphiné, Savoy, Bar and Lorraine, and from all parts of France and its dependencies, to Arras.

The assemblage of such numbers of men at arms was a wonderful beautiful sight. The earl of Flanders resided at Hêden, and heard daily from the king of France and the duke of Burgundy

of the great levies which were making, and in consequence issued a proclamation throughout Artois, forbidding any one, under pain of losing his life and fortune, to withdraw any thing whatever from house, fortress or town; for he was desirous that the men at arms who were marching to Artois should have the advantage of being served with whatever was in the low countries.

The king of France came into Artois, where he remained. Men at arms came to him from all quarters, and so handsomely equipped it was a fine sight to see: they quartered themselves as they arrived in the plains, and found all the barns quite full and well furnished.

The earl of Flanders came to Arras, which greatly pleased the king and his lords: he performed his homage in the presence of those peers who were there, for the county of Artois, and the king accepted him as his vassal. His majesty then addressed him, saying,—‘ Fair cousin, if it please God and St. Denis, we will restore you to your inheritance of Flanders, and will abate the pride of Philip von Artaveld and the Flemings so effectually that they shall never again have it in their power to rebel.’

‘ My lord,’ replied the earl, ‘ I have full confidence in it; and you will acquire such honour and glory that as long as the world lasts you will be praised, for certainly the pride of the Flemings is very great.’

Philip, whilst at the siege of Oudenarde, was  
 ed of every thing, and that the king of  
 France



France was marching a large army against him, though he pretended not to believe it, and said to his people,—‘ By what means does this young king think to enter Flanders? He is as yet too young by a year to imagine he can frighten us by his assembling an army. I will have the entrances so well guarded that it shall not be in their power for this year to cross the river Lis.’

He sent to Ghent for the lord de Harzelles. On his arrival, he said to him,—‘ Lord de Harzelles, you hear how the king of France is making preparations to destroy us. We must have a council on this subject. You shall remain here, and I will go to Bruges to learn surer intelligence, and to encourage the citizens of the principal towns. I will also establish such garisons on the river Lis, and at the chief passes, that the French shall not be able to advance through them.’

The lord de Harzelles having assented to this, Philip left the siege, and took the road towards Bruges. He travelled like a lord, having his displayed pennon borne before him, blazened with his arms : which were three hats argent on a field sable. On his arrival at Bruges, he found Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuitre, the governors of Bruges ; and having informed them, that the king of France was marching toward Flanders with a large army, and that it was necessary to provide a remedy by guarding the passes, he added,—‘ You, Peter du Bois, must go to the pass of Commines, to guard the river ; and you, Peter le Nuitre, will defend the bridge of War-

neton :



neton: you will break down all the bridges on the river as far as la Gerge, Hafelles, Meureville and Courtray, by which means the French will not be able to pass. I will myself go to Ypres, to encourage them, and to remonstrate with them, that as we are all united in one common cause, none should fail or hesitate to perform what we have sworn to do. It is not in the power of the king of France, nor these Frenchmen, to cross the river Lis and enter Flanders provided the passes be well guarded, for they must follow the course of the river to seek for a passage.'

The two Peters replied, 'Philip, you speak well, and we will obey what you have ordered. But have you had any news from our people in England?' 'No, by my troth,' said Philip, 'which I much wonder at. The parliament is sitting at London, and very shortly we must receive intelligence from them. The king of France cannot make such haste, but we shall have received succours from England, before they can do us much harm. I hope the king of England has issued his summons, and that the English will arrive here some night before we are aware.'

Thus did these companions discourse together, who held all Flanders under their obedience, except Dendremonde and Oudenarde.

## CHAP. XXXII.

SEVERAL KNIGHTS OF THE PARTY OF THE EARL OF FLANDERS, HAVING PASSED PONT-AMENIN, ARE DEFEATED AND KILLED ON THEIR ATTEMPT TO REPASS IT, THE FLEMINGS HAVING BROKEN DOWN THE BRIDGE.—PHILIP, HEARING THIS NEWS WHEN AT YPRES, MAKES USE OF IT TO ENCOURAGE THE INHABITANTS.

**W**HILST these preparations were going forward, and during the residence of the king of France at Arras, great bodies of men at arms were assembling in the Tournesis, Artois, and castlewick of Lille and its neighbourhood. Some knights and squires, who resided at Lille and thereabout, resolved to perform feats of arms that should gain them renown, chiefly through the exhortations of the Hafe de Flandres.

They collected about fix score knights and squires, and crossed the river Lis at Pont-Amenin, which was not then broken down, two leagues from Lille. They rode for the town of Harle, which they surprised; and, after slaying many in the town and environs, they drove the remainder out of the town. Their cries were heard in the neighbouring villages; the inhabitants of which sounded their alarm bells, and marched towards Harle and Pont-Amenin, whence the cries seemed to come.

When the Hafe, sir John Jumont, the constable de Vuillon, sir Henry Duffle, and the other knights and squires, had sufficiently alarmed the country, they thought it was time for them to retreat, and set out on their return, intending to repass the bridge, but they found it strongly occupied by Flemings, who were busily employed in destroying it; and, when they had broken down any parts, they covered them with straw, that the mischief might not be perceived.

The knights and squires at this moment arrived, mounted on the best of horses, and found upwards of two thousand peasants drawn up in a body without the town, prepared to advance upon them. The gentlemen, on seeing this, formed, and having fixed their lances on their rests, those best mounted instantly charged this body of peasants, with loud shouts. The Flemings opened their ranks through fear, but others say through malice; for they well knew the bridge would not bear them; and they said among themselves, 'Let us make way for them, and we shall soon see fine sport.'

The Hafe de Flandres, and his companions, desirous to get away, for any further stay would be against them, galloped for the bridge, which was now too weak to bear any great weight: however the Hafe, and some others, had the courage and good luck to pass over: they might be about thirty: but, as others were following, the bridge broke down under them. Horses and riders were overthrown, and both ed together.

Those

Those behind, seeing this misfortune, were thunderstruck, and knew not whither to fly to save themselves. Some leaped into the river, intending to swim, but they were not able thus to escape. The river was deep, and the banks so high and steep that the horses could not land. Great slaughter ensued; for the Flemings fell upon them and killed them easily, and without pity. They made several leap into the water, and they were drowned.

Sir John de Jumont narrowly escaped, for the bridge broke under him, but, by great agility of body, he saved himself: he was, however, badly wounded on the head and body by arrows, and it was six weeks before he recovered. At this unfortunate action were killed, the constables de Vuillon, de Bouchars, de St. Hilaire, and more drowned: sir Henry Duffle was slain. Including drowned and killed, there were upwards of sixty; and very fortunate were those who escaped. Great numbers returned wounded from this enterprize.

News was carried to the lords of France at Arras, of their countrymen having lost the day; and that the Hase de Flandres had conducted this foolish expedition. He was pitied by some, but by others not. Those who had been most accustomed to arms said, they had acted ill, to cross a river that was not fordable, attack a large town and enter an enemy's country, and return the way they had come, without having established guards on the bridge.

It was not an enterprize planned by prudent men at arms, who were desirous of success; but, since they planned their enterprize with so much self-sufficiency, they had suffered from the consequence.

This affair passed off, and was soon forgotten. Philip departed from Bruges and came to Ypres, where he was most joyfully received. Peter du Bois went to Commines, where all the inhabitants of the flat country were assembled, and instantly began his preparations for defence, loosening the planks of the bridge, so that, if there should be occasion, it could immediately be pulled down: but he was unwilling totally to destroy the bridge, lest the inhabitants of the adjacent flat country might suffer, who daily crossed it with their cattle in droves, to place them in greater security on that side of the Lis. The whole country was so much covered with them it was marvellous to see.

The day Philip von Artaveld came to Ypres, news arrived of the defeat of the French at Pont-Amenin, and that the Hase had been nearly taken. Philip was mightily rejoiced at this, and said with a smile, to encourage those near,—‘By the grace of God, and the just cause we are engaged in, it will all end so; and never shall this king, if he should be so foolishly advised to cross the Lis, return again to France.’

Philip was five days in Ypres, and harangued the people in the open market-place, to encourage them and to keep them steady to their engagements,



engagements, telling them that the king of France was coming to destroy them without the least shadow of right. 'Good people,' said Philip, 'do not be alarmed if he should march against us; for he will never be able to cross the river Lis, as I have had all the passes well guarded, and have ordered Peter du Bois to Commines with a large body of men: he is a loyal man, and one who loves the honour of Flanders; and Peter le Nui-tré I have sent to Warneton; all the other bridges on the Lis are broken down, and there is neither pass nor ford which they can cross but at these two towns. I have also heard from our friends whom we sent to England. In a short time we shall receive considerable succours from thence, as we have made a strong alliance with them. Keep up, therefore, valiantly your hopes, for our honour shall be unfulfilled; and observe punctually what you have promised and sworn to us in the good town of Ghent, which has had such trouble and difficulty to maintain the rights and franchises of Flanders. Now, let all those who are determined to remain steady to the cause, according to the oath they took, gallantly lift up their hands to heaven as a token of loyalty.'

At these words all who were in the market-place, and who had heard the speech, held up their hands as a sign of their loyalty. After this Philip descended from the scaffold on which he had harangued, and returned to his house, where he remained the whole day. On the morrow he and his attendants mounted their  
horses

horses and went towards Oudenarde, where the siege was still going on, notwithstanding the news of the French; but on passing through Courtray he rested two days.

---

### CHAP. XXXIII.

THE ORDER OF THE FRENCH ARMY IN ITS MARCH TO FLANDERS, AFTER THEY HAD HEARD THE BRIDGES WERE BROKEN AND GUARDED.

WE will for a while leave Philip von Artaveld, and speak of the young king of France who resided at Arras, and who, as he shewed, had a great desire to enter Flanders, to lower the pride of the Flemings; and was daily increasing his army, by the arrival of men at arms from all quarters. After the king had tarried eight days at Arras, he went to Lens, in Artois\*, where he staid two days. On the third day of November he departed and came to Seclin†, where he halted. A council was held, in the presence of the constable of France, the marshals of France, Burgundy and Flanders, to consider how they should proceed; for the common report in the army was the impossibility to enter Flanders in case the passes of the river should be strongly guarded. It rained, be-

---

\* Lens, a town in Artois on the Souchets, four leagues from Bethune.

† Seclin, an ancient town in Flanders, near Lille.

sides, at this time continually, and was so exceedingly cold that they could not advance. Some of the wisest said it was wrong to undertake such an expedition at this season of the year, and to bring the king so far into such a country. They ought not to have united before the summer to carry the war into Flanders, for the king had never been so far in his life.

This river Lis is so difficult to cross, that, except at certain places, it cannot be passed. There are no fords, and the country it runs through is so very marshy, horses cannot approach it. The constable, on hearing this, asked, 'Where does it rise?' He was answered, that it came from near Aire and St. Omer, 'Since it has a spring,' replied the constable, 'we will easily pass it. Order our men to march towards St. Omer, where we can cross this river at our ease, and enter Flanders. These Flemings are so proud and self-sufficient they will march to attack us, either before Ypres or at some other place.'

The marshals agreed to the proposition of the constable, and every thing remained in this state the whole day and night, when, on the morrow, the lord d'Albreth, the lord de Coucy, sir Aimemon de Pommiers, sir John de Vienne admiral of France, sir William de Poitiers, the bastard de Langres, the bègue de Villaines, sir Raoul de Coucy, the count de Conversant, the viscount d'Acy, sir Raoul de Raineval, the lord de St. Just, sir Arthur de Hêdin, sir Anthony d'Archies, the lord de Saimpi, sir William des Bourdes,

Bourdes, the lord de Longueville, the lord de Sulli, sir Tristan de l'Estouet, sir Oliver du Guefclin, sir Maurice du Tresquidy, sir Guy le Baveux, sir Lucas de l'Estrughen, sir Nicholas Pamel, the two marshals of France, sir Louis de Sancerre, and sir Louis de Blainville, the marshals of Burgundy and Flanders, sir Enguerrant de Haluyn, entered the chamber of the constable, to receive orders, how, and in what direction, they were to advance: whether they should march through Lille to Commines and Warneton, where the passes were guarded, or make for the upper countries of Venaye and St. Venant\*, and there cross the Lis. There were many debates among these lords on this subject: and those who knew the country said; 'Certainly, at such a season as this, it will not be right to advance into that country, neither can we go into the territories of Cassel, Surnes, or Verthes.' 'And what road shall we then take?' cried the constable. Upon which, the lord de Coucy said, 'I would propose that we march to Tournay and there cross the Scheld, and take the road towards Oudenarde. This road is very easy, and we shall engage with our enemies. After passing the Scheld we shall not have any thing to stop us before Tournay. We may thus arrive before Oudenarde, and punish Philip von Artaveld. We can have daily refreshments of provision come to us from Hainault, and follow us down the river from Tour-

---

\* A town in Artois on the Lis, four leagues from Bethune.

nay.' This speech of the lord de Coucy was well attended to, and supported by several for some time: but the constable and marshals were more inclined to follow the course of the Lis, to seek a shorter passage, than to march to the right or left, by a longer road; and they urged strong reasons for it, saying, 'If we look for any other road but the straight one, we do not shew ourselves good men at arms, at least it is our duty to examine if we cannot cross the river above or below this pass at Commines, which is guarded. Besides, if we retreat, our enemies will rejoice and be encouraged: their forces will encrease, and they will say that we fly from them. There is also another point which ought to be considered: we are ignorant what has been the success of the ambassadors they sent to England; for, if, by any treaty assistance should come to them from that quarter, they will give us much trouble. It is therefore better that we get rid of this business in Flanders as speedily as possible, than be thus long in determining upon it. Let us instantly, and with courage, march towards Commines, and God will assist us. We have so often crossed and recrossed larger rivers than this Lis, that it cannot long prevent us from passing it. Happen what may, when we are on its banks we can then form our opinions; and when those of our company in the van-guard (who have for these twenty or thirty years seen many more dangerous passes than this) have crossed this river, and gained the other side, our enemies will be a hundred times more frightened than



if we had marched at our ease, seeking a passage on the right or left, out of our direct road: we may then consider ourselves as lords of Flanders.'

This plan was unanimously adopted. During the time these lords were assembled, they considered how they should form their battalions; and selected those who were to march on foot with the constable in the van-guard, in order to clear the roads for the army to pass and march in a line, and to act as scouts to observe and find out their enemies. They also chose those who were to be in the king's battalion, regulated the arms with which they should serve, and appointed proper persons to carry the oriflamme of France and to guard it; and likewise determined of what numbers the wings were to be composed, and how many were to be in the rear-guard. All these things they debated and arranged.

When these points had been settled, and they could not think of any thing more that was necessary to be done, the council broke up, and every one retired to his lodgings. Those lords and barons who had not been present were informed of the regulations, and the manner in which they were to act from henceforward.

It was this day ordered that the king should on the morrow dislodge from Seclin, march through Lille without halting, and take up his quarters at Margnette l'Abbaye; and that the van-guard should pass on to Commines and Warneton, and do the most they could in the course of the day.

This

This being settled, the master of the cross-bows, in conjunction with the constable and marshals, unanimously appointed sir Josse de Haluyn and the lord de Rambures to the command of the infantry, who were to clear the roads by cutting down hedges and forests, filling up vallies and every thing else that might be necessary: their numbers amounted to seventeen hundred and sixty.

In the van-guard were the marshals of Flanders, France and Burgundy, who had under their command seventeen hundred men at arms and seven hundred cross-bows, besides four thousand infantry whom the earl had given to them, armed with large shields and other weapons. It was also ordered that the earl of Flanders, and his battalion, consisting of about sixteen hundred men at arms, knights, squires and infantry, should march on the wings of the van-guard to reinforce it, should it be necessary. It was likewise ordered that the king's battalion should march between the van-guard and the battalion of the earl of Flanders, and that the king's three uncles, Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon should be in it, and also the count de la Marche, sir James de Bourbon, his brothers, the count de Clermont, the dauphin d'Auvergne, the count de Dampmartin, the count de Sancerre, sir John de Boulogne, to the amount of six thousand men at arms, two thousand Genoese cross-bows and others.

The rear-guard was to consist of two thousand men at arms and two hundred archers; the  
com-

commanders of which were the lord John d'Artois count d'Eu, the lord Guy count de Blois, fir Waleran count de St. Pol, fir William count de Harcôurt, the lord de Châtillon and the lord de Sere.

Sir Peter de Villiers was appointed to bear the oriflamme, attended by four knights, whose names were fir Robert le Baveux, fir Morice de Sancourt, fir Guy de Tresquidi and Brandon de la Heuse: le borgne, de Ruet and le borgne de Montdoulcet were named to guard the banner.

It is proper to be known, that the lords who had planned this expedition had determined they would never return to France until they had engaged Philip von Artaveld and his forces, and it was for this reason they had drawn up their battalions as ready for the combat on the morrow.

The lords d'Albreth, de Coucy, and fir Hugh de Hanlon were ordered to form the battalions and place them in array. Sir William de Bannes and the lord de Champreny were appointed marshals to attend to the quarters of the king and his battalion.

It was also ordered, that on the day of battle, no one but the king and eight valiant men appointed to attend his person should be on horseback. The names of these eight men were as follows: the lord de Raineval, le bègue de Villaines, fir Aymemon de Pommiers, fir Enguerant de Haluyn, the viscount d'Acy, fir Guy le Baveux, fir Nicholas de Pennel and fir William des Bourdes. The lord de Raineval and fir Enguerant de Haluyn were to take post in front of the king: le bègue de Villaines and the viscount d'Acy

d'Acy (who is called in several places hereafter the viscount d'Aunoy) were to place themselves on each side; and sir Aymemon de Pommiers, sir Nicholas de Pennel, sir Guy le Baveux and sir William des Bourdes were to take post in the rear.

It was likewise ordered, that on the day of battle, sir Oliver de Clifton, constable of France, and sir William de Poitiers, bastard de Langres, should advance on horseback, to reconnoitre and observe the appearance of the enemy.

---

#### CHAP. XXXIV.

SOME FEW OF THE FRENCH, NOT BEING ABLE TO CROSS THE LIS AT THE BRIDGE OF COMMINES, FIND MEANS OF DOING SO, BY BOATS AND OTHER CRAFT, UNKNOWN TO THE FLEMINGS.

**T**HE orders above mentioned were punctually obeyed; and the van-guard dislodged on the morrow, marching in order of battle towards Commines. They found the roads well made, for the lord de Fransures\* and sir Josse de Haluyn had paid great attention to them: this was on the Monday.

When the constable and marshals of France, with the van-guard, arrived at the bridge of Commines, they were forced to halt; for it was so completely destroyed that it was not in the power of man to repair it, if any opposition

---

\* Fransures. He before calls him Rambures.

should be made when they were attempting it, as the Flemings were in great force on the opposite side of the river, and ready to defend the pass against all who might wish to attack them: they were upwards of nine thousand, under the command of Peter du Bois and others, who shewed good inclinations to repulse any attempt.

Peter du Bois had placed himself on the causeway, at the end of the bridge, with a battle-axe in his hand; and the Flemings were drawn up on each side.

The constable of France and the lords with him, having considered the situation, thought it impossible to pass the river at that place unless the bridge were rebuilt; they ordered their servants to follow the course of the river, and examine its banks for about a league up and down. When they returned, they informed their masters, who were waiting for them, that they had not been able to find any place where the cavalry could pass

Upon hearing this, the constable was much vexed and said,—‘ We have been badly advised to take this road: better would it have been for us to have gone to St. Omer than remain in this danger, or to have crossed the Scheld at Tournay, as the lord de Coucy advised, and to have marched straight to Oudenarde and fought our enemies, since it is both our duty and inclination to combat them; and they are so presumptuous they would have waited for us at their siege.’—The lord Louis de Sancerre then said,  
 ‘ I am of opinion that we fix our quarters  
 here



here for this day, and lodge our army, should it arrive, as well as we are able; and that we send to Lille to seek for boats and hurdles, that may come down the river, with which to-morrow we can throw a bridge from these fine meads and cross over; for we have no other alternative.'

Upon this, sir Joffe de Haluyn said,—' My lord, we have been informed that there will be great difficulties between this and Lille; for the river Menyn, on which all boats must pass to come hither, has been obstructed by large beams thrown across it by the Flemings who are in those parts: they have besides totally destroyed the bridge, and we learn it is impossible for any vessels or boats to pass.'

'I know not then,' added the constable, 'what we can now do. It will be better for us to take the road to Aire, and cross the Lis at that place, since we are unable to do so here.'

During the time the constable and marshals of France and Burgundy were in this dilemma at the bridge of Commynes, several knights and squires silently withdrew, with the intent to hazard some gallant deeds of arms and attempt to cross the river, whatever it might cost them. They meant likewise to combat the Flemings in their entrenchments and open a passage, as I shall now relate.

While the van-guard was on its march from Lille to Commynes, the lord de St. Py, and some other knights from Hainault, Flanders, Artois, and even France, had held a council  
without

without the knowledge of the constable or marshals. They said ; ' We will procure two or three boats, which we will launch into the river Lis, at a sheltered place below Commines, and will fix posts on each side of the river where it is not wide, to fasten cords to. We shall by this means soon convey over a large body of men, and by marching on the rear of our enemies we may attack them, and, if victorious, we shall gain the reputation of valiant men at arms.' After they had thus determined in council, the lord de St. Py exerted himself so much that he procured from Lille a boat and cords, with every other necessary article. On the other hand, sir Herbeaux de Belleperche and sir John de Roye, who were companions in this expedition, had also caused a boat to be brought. Sir Henry de Manny, sir John de Malatrait and sir John Chauderon, Bretons, who had been of this council, had likewise provided one, and followed the preceding companies.

The lord de St. Py was the first who arrived at the river with his boat, cords and fastenings. They fixed a strong stake to which they tied the cord: three varlets then crossed over, and the boat, with the cords, being launched, they fixed on the opposite side another strong post, to which they fastened the other end of the cord: and, this being done, they returned with the boat to their master.

It happened that the constable and marshals of  
 e were at that time at the bridge of Com-  
 ondering how they could discover a pas-  
 sage,

sage. They were then informed of the intentions of the lord de St. Py and the other knights. Upon which the constable, addressing himself to the lord Louis de Sancerre, said; 'Marshal, go and see what they are doing, and if it be possible to cross the river in the manner they propose, add some of our men to theirs.'

Just as these knights were preparing to embark, the marshal of France came thither, attended by a large company of knights and squires. They made way for him, as was right. He stopped on the bank, and with pleasure saw the arrangement of the boats. The lord de St. Py, addressing him, said, 'My lord, is it agreeable to you that we should cross here?' 'I am very well pleased with it,' replied the marshal; 'but you are running great risks; for if our enemies, who are at Commines, should know your intentions, they would do you great mischief.'

'My lord, answered the lord de Saint Py, 'nothing venture, nothing win: in the name of God and St. George, we will cross over, and, before to-morrow evening, will fall suddenly on our enemies and attack them.'

The lord de Saint Py then placed his pennon in the boat, and was the first who stepped into it: he was followed by nine others, who were as many as the boat could hold; and instantly, by means of the cord they held, crossed over. When disembarked, in order to prevent themselves from being discovered, they entered a small alder grove, where they lay hidden.

Those on the bank, by means of the cord drew the boat back. The count de Conversant, lord d'Anghien, embarked with his banner, with the lord de Vertain his brother, and seven others. These nine then passed, and the third time others followed them.

The two other boats now arrived that belonged to sir Herbaut de Belleperche, sir John de Roye and the Bretons, which were launched in the same manner the first had been. These knights then crossed, and none but determined men at arms did the same. It was a pleasure to see with what eagerness they embarked: at times, a great crowd was pushing who should cross first, so that if the marshal of France had not been there, who kept them in proper order, accidents would have happened from their overloading the boats.

News was brought to the constable and the lords of France at the bridge of Commines, how their people were crossing the river, when he said to the sénéchal de Rieux, 'Go and examine this passage, I beg of you, and see if our people be passing as they tell us.' The lord de Rieux was never happier than when he had this commission, and, clapping spurs to his horse, hastened thither with his whole company, to the amount of full forty men at arms.

When he arrived at the passage where one hundred and fifty of his countrymen had already crossed, he immediately dismounted, and said he would also pass the river. The marshal of France would

would not refuse him; and intelligence was sent to the constable, that his cousin the lord de Rieux had crossed. The constable mused a little, and then said; 'Make the cross-bows shoot, and skirmish with the Flemings who are on the other side of the bridge, to occupy their attention, and prevent them from observing our people; for, if they should have any notion what they are about, they will fall upon them, destroy the passage, and kill all those who have crossed: and I would much rather die than that should happen.'

Upon this, the cross-bows and infantry advanced. There were among them some who flung hand-grenades,\* which bursting, cast out bolts of iron beyond the bridge, even as far as the town of Commines. The skirmish now began to be very sharp, and the van-guard, by their movements, seemed determined to cross the bridge if they could. The Flemings, being shielded up to their noses, made a good appearance, and defended themselves well. Thus passed this day, which was a Monday, in skirmishing; and it was soon dark, for at that season the days are very short. The boats, however, continued to carry over men at arms in great numbers, who on their landing, hid themselves in the alder wood, waiting for more.

You may easily guess what perils they were in; for, had those in Commines gained the least

---

\* I call bombardes hand-grenades: to my mind, it explains this passage more easily. Lord Berners totally omits it.



intelligence of them, they must have had them at their mercy, and conquered the greater part, besides taking the boats; but God favoured the other party, and consented that the pride of the Flemings should be humbled.

---

### CHAP. XXXV.

A SMALL BODY OF FRENCH, HAVING CROSSED THE LIS, DRAW UP IN BATTLE ARRAY BEFORE THE FLEMINGS.

**I** MAINTAIN, that all men of understanding must hold this enterprise of the boats, and passage of men at arms, as a deed of superior valour and enterprise. Towards evening, the knights and squires of the van-guard were eager to cross with their companions; and the lord de Laval, the viscount de Rohan, the lord de la Belliere, the lord de Combort, sir Oliver du Guesclin, le Barrois des Barres, the lord de Collet, sir Reginald de Thouars, the lord de Poufanges, sir William de Lignac, sir Walter de Passat, le sire de Thouars, sir Louis de Confaule, sir Trifstan de la Jaille, the viscount de Meaux, the lord de Mailly, passed over, and Bretons, Flemings, Poitevins, French, Berruyers, Burgundians, Artoisfmen, Troyens and Hainaulters in numbers, so that late in this Monday evening there were, on the Flanders side of the river, about four hundred men at arms, all the flower of

of

of knighthood: for no varlet was suffered to cross.

The lord Louis de Sancerre, seeing so many gallant men (sixteen banners and thirty pennons,) said, he should think himself to blame, if he remained behind. He then entered the boats, with his knights and squires; and the lord de Hangeft, &c. crossed at the same time.

When they were all assembled, they said, 'It is time to march towards Commines; to look at our enemies, and see if we cannot make our quarters good in the town.'

Upon this, they tightened their arms, buckled their helmets on their heads in a proper manner, and, advancing through the marshes which are contiguous to the river, marched in order of battle, with banners and pennons displayed, as if they were immediately to engage. The lord de Saint Py was the principal conductor and commander in chief, because he knew the country better than any of the others.

As they were thus marching in close order, in their way towards the town, Peter du Bois and the Flemings were drawn up on the causeway; when, casting their eyes towards the meads, they saw this body of men at arms approaching. They were exceedingly astonished, and demanded from Peter du Bois, 'By what devil of a road have these men at arms come? and how have they crossed the Lis?' He replied,—'They must have crossed in boats, and we have known nothing of the matter; for there is neither bridge nor  
passable

passable ford over the Lis between this and Courtray.'

'What shall we do?' said some of them to Peter du Bois: 'shall we offer them battle?' 'By no means,' replied Peter: 'let them advance: but we will remain in our strength and in our place: we are on high ground, and they on low, so that we have great advantage over them; and, if we descend to meet them in the plain, we shall lose it. Let us wait until the night become more obscure, and then we will consider how we had best act. They are not of force sufficient to withstand us in battle; and besides, we are acquainted with all the roads of the country of which they must be ignorant.'

This advice was followed; for the Flemings never budged from their post, but remained steady at the foot of the bridge, drawn up in order of battle on the causeway, in silence, and, by their appearance seemed as if they had not noticed what was passing. Those who had crossed the river continued advancing slowly through the marshes, following the course of it as they approached Commynes.

The constable of France, on the opposite side of the water, saw his men at arms, with banners and pennons fluttering in the wind, drawn up in a handsome small battalion, and marching toward Commynes. On seeing this, his blood began to run cold from the great dread he had of their being defeated; for he knew the Flemings were in great force on that side of the water,

water. In the excess of rage, he cried out—  
 ‘ Ah, St. Ives! ha, St. George! ha, our Lady! what do I see there? I see in part the flower of our army, who are most unequally matched. I would rather have died than have witnessed this. Ah! sir Louis de Sancerre, I thought you more temperate and better taught than I see you now are; how could you have hazarded so many noble knights and squires, and men at arms, against ten or twelve thousand men, who are proud, presumptuous and well prepared, and who will shew them no mercy, whilst we are unable, if there should be a necessity, to aid them? Ah, Rohan! ah, Laval! ah, Rieux! ah, Beaumanoir! ah, Longueville! ah, Rochfort! ah, Manny! ah, Malestroit! ah, Conversant! ah, such a one and such a one, how afflicted am I for you all! when, without consulting me, you have run into such imminent danger. Why am I constable of France? for, if you be conquered I shall incur all the blame, and they will say I ordered you on this mad enterprise.’

The constable, before he heard that such numbers of valiant men had crossed, had forbidden any of those near him to pass the river; but, when he saw the appearance of those who had passed, he said aloud, ‘ I give free liberty for all who wish it to cross, if they be able.’

At these words, the knights and squires stepped forth, seeking means to cross the bridge; but it was soon night, and they were forced to leave off their attempt, though they had begun

to

to lay planks on the beams, and even some had placed their targets to make a road; so that the Flemings who were in Commines had enough to do to watch them, and were puzzled how to act, for on the one hand they saw below the bridge, in the marshes, a large body of men at arms, who had halted with their lances advanced before them, and to whom great reinforcements were coming, and on the other those of the vanguard on the opposite side of the bridge were constantly skirmishing with them and exerting themselves lustily to repair the bridge.

In this situation were the French who had that evening crossed over in boats. They had halted on the marshes, in mud and filth up to their ancles. Now consider what must have been their courage and difficulties, when in these long winter nights they thus remained a whole night with their arms and helmets on, with their feet in the mire, and without any sort of refreshments. Certainly, I say, they are worthy of great renown, for they were but a handful of men in comparison with the Flemings in Commines and in that neighbourhood. They dared not, therefore, advance to attack them, and for this reason had halted, saying among themselves, 'Let us stop here until it be day light, when we shall have a fight of these Flemings who quit not the advantage of their entrenchments; but at last they will not fail to come to us, and when near we will shout our war cries with a loud voice each his own cry, or the cry of his lord, notwithstanding



withstanding all our lords may not have joined us: by this means we shall frighten them, when we will fall on them with a thorough good will. It is in the power of God, and within the compass of our own ability, to defeat them, for they are badly armed, whilst our spears and swords are of well tempered steel from Bourdeaux; and the haubergeons\* they wear will be a poor defence, and cannot prevent our blows from penetrating through them.' With such hopes as these did those who had passed the river comfort themselves, and remain in silence during the night.

The constable of France, who was on the other side of the river, towards Lille, had great anguish at heart on their account, and wished himself and army in the town of Commines with them. The marshals of Burgundy and Flanders, and those knights who were near his person, in order to comfort him, said; 'My lord do not be cast down; for all must own that those who have crossed the river are truly valiant, as well as prudent knights, and we must believe they will not do any thing but what shall be dictated by good sense and valour. They will not engage in combat this day, and you have given permission for all to pass the river as they can. To-morrow, as soon as day-break shall appear, let us exert ourselves to cross the bridge. We have this day made more provision of planks and timber than will be necessary, so that we

---

\* Haubergeons,—small coats of mail.

may be soon over to reinforce them, should they have need of it, and these wicked people will be prevented from overpowering them.'

Thus was the constable of France consoled by the valiant men in his company.

---

## CHAP. XXXVI.

THE FRENCH WHO HAD CROSSED THE LIS DEFEAT, WITH GREAT SLAUGHTER, PETER DU BOIS AND THE FLEMINGS.—THE VAN-GUARD OF THE FRENCH ARMY REPAIR AND PASS OVER THE BRIDGE OF COMMINES.

PETER du Bois knowing these men at arms were in the marshes joining Commines, was not perfectly at his ease, for he was uncertain what might be the event. He had, however, under his command, six or seven thousand men, to whom, during the night, he had thus spoken; 'The men at arms who have crossed the river to fight with us are neither of iron nor steel. They have laboured hard this whole day, and have been all night standing in these marshes, so that it is possible, towards day-break, they will be overpowered with sleep. While they are in this situation, we will come sily to attack them: our numbers are sufficient to surround them: but when we have so done, let no one dare to rush upon them, but remain silent; for when it shall be proper time for you to act, I will inform you.' To this command of Peter they all professed obedience.

On



On the other hand, the barons, knights and squires, who had remained in the marshes so near the enemy, were far from being comfortable: some of them were up to their ancles in mud, and others half way up their legs. But their eagerness and joy, on gaining this pass with so much honour, (for very gallant deeds of arms were likely to ensue) made them forget all their pains and difficulties. If it had been in summer-time, instead of the seventh day of November, they would have enjoyed it; but now the ground was cold, muddy and dirty, and the nights were long. At times also it rained heavily on their heads, but it ran off, as they had their helmets on and every thing prepared for the combat, and were only waiting for the enemy to come and attack them. The great attention they paid to be in readiness kept up their spirits, and made them almost forget their situation.

The lord de Saint Py full loyally acquitted himself in this expedition, as a scout and observer of what the Flemings were doing, though he was the commander in chief. He was continually on the look-out, and went privily to reconnoitre their motions. On his return, he said to his companions in a low voice, 'Now up: our enemies are very quiet: perhaps they will advance on us at day-break: therefore be on your guard, and prepared to act.' He would then return again, to see if any thing were going forward, and then come back to tell what he had observed. This he continued to do until the hour which the Flemings had fixed upon to at-  
tack

tack them. It was on the point of day when they began their march in close order, without uttering a word. The lord de Saint Py, who was on the watch, no sooner saw this manœuvre than he found they were in earnest, and hastening to his companions, said to them, 'Now, my lords, be alert, we have but to do out utmost, for our enemy is on his march, and will be instantly here. These barons of new date are advancing slowly, and think to catch and surprise us: shew yourselves true men at arms, for we shall have a battle.'

As the lord de Saint Py uttered these words, the knights and squires, with great courage, seized their long Bourdeaux spears, and having grasped them with a hearty will, placed themselves in as good order as any knights or squires could devise.

When the lords who had crossed the river, and, as I have before said, found themselves obliged to halt in the marshes, saw that the Flemings waited their opportunity to attack them, they said among themselves, 'Since we are not in sufficient force to begin the combat, when the Flemings advance upon us they will not know what numbers we are: let us each set up one cry, or that of the lord to whom we may belong whether he be present or not; and, by thus shouting loudly, we shall so much alarm them that they may be defeated. In addition to this, we will receive them on the points of our spears. In this manner

it fall out: for, when the Flemings advanced  
 combat, the knights and squires began to  
 war cries, insomuch that the constable

and

and van-guard, who had not yet crossed the bridge heard them, and said, 'Our friends are engaged: may God help them! for at this moment we are unable to give them any assistance.'

Peter du Bois marched in front, and as followed by his Flemings; but, when they approached the French, they were received on the sharp points of their long Bourdeaux spears, to which their coats of mail made not more resistance than if they had been of cloth thrice doubled, so that they passed through their bodies, heads and stomachs.

When the Flemings felt these sharp spears which impaled them, they fell back, and the French advancing gained ground upon them; for there were none so hardy but what feared their strokes. Peter du Bois was one of the first wounded and run through by a lance. It came quite out at his shoulder: he was also wounded on the head, and would have been instantly slain if it had not been for the body-guard he had formed, of thirty stout varlets, who taking him in their arms, carried him as quickly as they could out of the crowd.

The mud from the causeway to Commines was so deep that all these people sunk in it up to the middle of their legs. The men at arms, who had been long accustomed to their profession, drove down and slew the Flemings without let or hindrance: they shouted, 'Saint Py for ever!' 'Laval, Sancerre, Anghien,' and the war-cries of others who were there. The Flemings were panic-struck, and began to give way, when they saw these knights attack them so vigorously and  
pierce



pierce them through with their spears. They retreated, and falling back on each other, were followed by the French, who marched through them or around them, always attacking the thickest bodies. They no more spared killing them than if they had been so many dogs; and they were in the right, for, had the Flemings conquered, they would have served them the same.

The Flemings, finding themselves thus driven back, and that the men at arms had won the causeway and bridge, counselled together, to set fire to the town, in hopes it would cause the French to retreat, or enable them to collect their people. This was executed, and fire set to several houses, which were instantly in flames; but they were disappointed in thinking by this to frighten the French, for they pursued them as valiantly as before, fighting and slaying them on the ground, or in the houses whither they had retreated.

Upon this the Flemings made for the open plain, where they collected in a body. They sent to Vertain, Poperingue, Bergues, Rollers, Mesieres, Warneton and the other neighbouring towns, to urge them to come to their assistance at Commines. Those who fled, and the inhabitants of the villages near Commines, began to set their bells a-ringing, which clearly shewed there was an engagement going forward.

Some of them, however, began to slacken, and others to occupy themselves in saving what they could of their goods, and to carry them to Ypres or Courtray. Women and children ran  
her, leaving their houses full of furniture, cat-

tle

tle and grain. Others again marched in haste towards Commines, to help their countrymen who were fighting.

While all this was passing, and those valiant knights who had crossed the Lis in boats were so gallantly engaged, the constable and van-guard were busily employed in attempting to repair the bridge and cross it. There was a very great throng, for the constable had given permission for all to pass it who could. There was much danger for those who crossed it first; and the lords who did so were obliged to step on targets thrown on the beams of the bridge. When they had crossed, they began to strengthen the bridge, for they found the planks lying on the ground, which they put in their proper places. During the night two waggon-loads of hurdles were brought, which were of great use to them, so that shortly it was made as strong as ever. On the Tuesday the whole van-guard passed, took possession of the place, and, as they crossed, fixed their quarters in the town.

The earl of Flanders, hearing that the van-guard was engaged at the pass of Commines, sent thither six thousand infantry to their assistance; but when they arrived, the business was over and the bridge rebuilt. The constable sent them to Warneton to rebuild that bridge, that the baggage might pass it this Tuesday without delay.

News was brought on Tuesday morning to the king of France at the abbey of Marquette, that the pass at Commines was won, and the van-guard

on the other side, which was very agreeable to the king and his uncles. It was instantly determined that the king should cross the river; and, the king having heard mass with his lords and drank a cup, they mounted their horses and took the road to Commines. Those of the van-guard who were in Commines drove out the Flemings. There were slain of them in the streets and fields about four thousand, not including those killed in the pursuit, in wind-mills, and in monasteries, whither they had fled for shelter; for, as soon as the Bretons had crossed, they mounted their horses and began a chase after the Flemings and overrun the country which was then rich and plentiful.

The lords de Rieux, de Laval, de Malestroit, the viscount de la Belliere and the lord de Combort, with their men, rode on until they came to Vertain, which is a large town: it was taken and burnt, and those found in it were put to death. The Bretons had great profit from their pillage, as well as the others who had spread abroad over the country. They found the houses full of draperies, furs, with cloths of gold and silver; for, trusting to the strength of the passage over the river Lis, the Flemings had not carried away any thing from their houses to the strong towns.

The first Bretons, Normans and Burgundians who entered Flanders by the pass at Commines, paid no attention to pieces of cloth, furs or jewels, but to the gold and silver which they found. However, those who followed cleared the whole country, for every thing was acceptable to them.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD TAKES MEASURES TO RESIST THE FORCE OF THE KING OF FRANCE.—HE RECEIVES AN ANSWER FROM HIS AMBASSADORS IN ENGLAND.

**B**AD news soon flies abroad. On Tuesday morning Philip von Artaveld heard, while he lay before Oudenarde, that the French had crossed the Lis on the Monday in boats, and had advanced as far as Commines, having conquered the Flemings posted there and in the adjacent parts; that about six thousand Flemings had been slain, and that Peter du Bois was supposed to be dead.

Philip was thunderstruck at this intelligence; and he asked the lord de Harzelles who was present, 'what was to be done.' The lord de Harzelles replied, 'You must go to Ghent, and collect as many people as you can in the town, and return with them hither: you must then march your whole army to Courtray; for when the king of France learns that you are marching in full force against him, he will consider well before he advances further into the country. We ought in a short time to receive news from our ambassadors in England. It may be that the king of England and his uncles will cross the sea with a large army, or perhaps they have already done so, which will be fortunate for us.'

‘I am surprised,’ answered Philip, ‘how the English can so long delay it, when they know they are to have free entrance into this country; and I marvel what they are thinking of, as well as our people who are there. Notwithstanding this, I will not hesitate going to Ghent to draw out the arriere-ban, with which I will return and offer battle to the king of France, whatever be the consequences. I am informed by Peter du Bois, that the king of France has full twenty thousand men at arms, which constitute sixty thousand fighting men. I will draw up in battle-array as many to meet him; and if God, out of his grace, and the just cause we have, should enable me to defeat him, I shall be the most respected lord in the world; if I be discomfited, better fortune will befall a greater lord than myself.’

As Philip von Artaveld and the lord de Harzelles were thus conversing, some soldiers arrived who had been at the battle of Commines, who confirmed the first intelligence. Philip said, ‘And Peter du Bois, is he dead, or a prisoner?’ They answered, ‘Neither; but he has been severely wounded in the battle, and has retired to Bruges.’

At these words, Philip mounted his horse and ordered thirty of his men to do the same, when he set out for Bruges. He quitted, however, the direct road, to view some of the garrison of Oudenarde who had made a sally the preceding night, but had been overpowered and slain: they were twelve in number who had been put to death.



death. As he was thus examining the dead, he saw, coming towards him from Ghent, a herald attached to the king of England, whose name was Chandos, though called Ireland king at arms. Philip was much pleased at the arrival of this herald, and asked 'what news he had brought.' 'My lord,' replied the herald, 'five of your ambassadors returned to Ghent, accompanied by a knight called sir William Frenenton\*, who, by orders from the king and council, bring letters (as we learnt from them at Dover) addressed to you as regent of Flanders. When you know the contents of these letters, and approve of the great alliance offered to you, large reinforcements will be instantly sent you on the return of the knight and his companions to England.'

Philip said,—'I am not well satisfied with such an arrangement: the succours will come too late. Go to my quarters.' He ordered him to be conducted to the lodgings of the lord de Harzelles, that he might hear the news; while he took the road to Ghent, but in so melancholy a temper of mind that nothing could be got from him, nor could he be persuaded to enter into any agreeable conversation.

---

\* Sir W. Frenington. Q. if not Farrington.

## CHAP. XXXVIII.

THE KING OF FRANCE CROSSES THE LIS AT THE  
BRIDGE OF COMMINES.—THE TOWN OF YPRES  
SURRENDERS TO HIM.

**W**E will now return to the king of France, and say how he went on. When intelligence was brought him of Commines being conquered, that the Flemings were dispersed, and the bridge rebuilt, he set out from the abbey of Marquette, where he had lodged, and marched with his whole army in battle-array, as was befitting him to do, towards Commines. The king and his uncles arrived at Commines on the Tuesday, and took up their lodgings in the town; from whence the van-guard had marched for the hill of Ypres, where they had fixed their quarters. On the Wednesday morning the king advanced to the hill of Ypres, where he remained until the baggage and the remainder of his army should cross the river at Commines or at Warneton, for there were very numerous trains, and multitudes of horses.

On Wednesday, the king's rear-guard passed the bridge of Commines. It consisted of two thousand men at arms and two thousand cross-bows, under the command of the count d'Eu, the count de Blois, the count St. Pol, the count de Harcourt, the lords de Châtillon and de la Fere. These lords, with their men, lodged this Wednesday at Commines.

When

When night came, and these lords thought of reposing themselves after their march, they heard the cry, 'To arms!' They thought certainly they should have a battle, and that the Flemings from Ypres, Cassel, Bergues, and their dependencies were collected and on their march to attack them. The lords armed themselves, put on their helmets, displayed their banners before their lodgings; and, having lighted torches, each lord advanced to the causeway under his banner or pennon: as their men came, they drew up and arranged themselves under their proper banners; and thus they remained, half way up their legs in mud, almost the whole night. You may imagine if these lords had the best of it, such as the count de Blois and the others, who had not been accustomed to suffer such cold and comfortless nights as these a month before Christmas; but, when their honour was at stake, they minded it not, for they thought they should be attacked every moment: however, it was not so, for this was a false alarm caused by a scuffle among the varlets. Their lords, however, suffered for it, which they bore as well as they could.

On Thursday morning, the rear-guard dislodged from Commynes, and marched in good order towards their main army, which was encamped on the hill of Ypres, the van-guard, the battalion of the king and all. The principal commanders held a council, to consider whether they should march to Ypres, Courtray, or Bruges. Whilst they remained there, the French foragers overran the country, where they found a marvellous quantity

quantity of beasts, grain, and all other provisions; for, since they had gained the passage at Commynes, they were never in want.

The inhabitants of Ypres, finding the king so near with his whole army, and the passage gained, were not much at their ease, and considered how they should act. The town-council assembled. The richest and chief inhabitants, who had been of the moderate party, but who had not dared to shew it, proposed throwing themselves on the king's mercy, and sending to him the keys of the town. The governor, who was from Ghent, appointed by Philip von Artaveld, would not listen to a surrender, but said, 'Our town is sufficiently strong, and we are well provided with every thing. We will stand our ground; during which time Philip will assemble his forces, to combat the king and raise the siege.'

Others replied, 'That he was not assured this would so happen: that it was not in the power of Philip von Artaveld, nor of the whole country, to defeat the king of France, unless they had the assistance of the English, of which there was not any appearance; and that, in short, the best thing they could do would be to surrender themselves to the king of France.'

High words ensued, which ended in a riot, in which the chief inhabitants were masters. The governor, named Peter Vauclaire, was slain. When this was over, they called to them two preaching friars, whom they sent to the king his uncles on the hill of Ypres, to know if agreeable to them to enter into an amity with the town.

The



The king was advised to grant passports to twelve of the citizens and an abbot (who being at Ypres had interfered in this business) to come to the camp, and explain more fully what their intentions were. The friars returned to the town, when the twelve citizens elected by the council and inhabitants, and the abbot, went to mount Ypres, where, casting themselves on their knees, they offered to place the town under the king's obedience for ever, and without any terms of reservation.

The king of France following the good advice which was given him, to gain the country by gentle means, and not wishing to shew any ill will or cruelty, received them kindly, and accepted their offer; on condition that the town would pay forty thousand francs, to defray the smaller expenses which this expedition had hitherto cost.

The inhabitants of Ypres were much rejoiced at this event, and never afterwards rebelled. Thus were the citizens pardoned. They entreated the king and his uncles would be pleased to partake of some refreshments in their town, which would give great joy to the inhabitants. A promise was in truth made them, that the king should come thither, when he should be further advanced in Flanders. Upon this the deputation returned to the town, mightily pleased to find themselves at peace with the king of France. The forty thousand francs were instantly raised among themselves, and paid to the king, or to his commissioners, before he made his entry into Ypres.



## CHAP. XXXIX.

THE KING OF FRANCE RECEIVES INFORMATION  
OF A RIOT AMONG THE PARISIANS—SEVERAL  
PLACES IN FLANDERS SURRENDER TO HIM.

**D**URING the time the king of France was encamped on the hill of Ypres, news was brought that the Parisians were in rebellion: and that they had resolved, as it was then reported, to pull down the castle of Beauté, which is situated in the wood of Vincennes, and the castle of the Louvre, as well as all other castellated houses in the neighbourhood of Paris, to prevent being oppressed in future by their means.

One of their leaders made a speech to excite to mischief, but which, however, as it appeared afterwards, turned out quite the contrary:—  
‘My fair sirs, let us abstain from doing this, until we see how the king’s affairs turn out in Flanders. If the Ghent men succeed, as I truly hope they will, then will be the time to destroy all these castles. Let us not begin any thing which we may repent of afterwards.’

It was Nicholas le Flâmand who by this speech made the Parisians give up their intentions of committing outrages. They kept within the walls of Paris, which they had amply supplied with every thing; and had as rich and handsome armour as if they had been great

There were upwards of thirty thousand  
armed

armed from head to foot, like true men at arms, and more than thirty thousand armed with mallets. They worked day and night in forging helmets, and purchased armour wherever it was to be sold.

Now consider what a sad devilment it would have been, if the king of France, and the gallant chivalry with which he was accompanied had been defeated in Flanders. It may readily be supposed, that then all the nobility would have been destroyed in France, as well as in other places; for the Jecquerie were never so ferocious as they would at such a time have been.

In like manner the peasants began to rebel at Rheims, at Châlons in Champagne, and down the river Marne, and to menace those gentlemen, ladies and children who had remained at home. At Orleans, Blois, Rouen, and in the Beauvoisis, the devil had entered their heads to prompt them to murder every one, if God had not provided a remedy, as you will soon have related.

When those of the castlewicks of Cassel, Bergues, Bourbourg, Gravelines, Furnes, Dunkerque, Poperingue, Tourrout, Vaillant, and Malines, had heard that the men of Ypres had surrendered and put themselves under the obedience of the king of France, who had graciously pardoned them, they began to be much alarmed. After these towns had well considered the business, the inhabitants seized their governors, whom Philip von Artaveld had put over them, and having bound them strongly, so that they  
could

could not escape, led them to the king on mount Ypres, in order to please him and to appease his anger. On their arrival, they cast themselves on their knees, and said,—‘ Noble king, we put our lives, towns, and fortunes under your obedience, and wish so to remain. In order to shew that we regard you as our true lord, here are the governors whom Philip von Artaveld had fet over us; for by force, and not otherwise, has he made us obey him: you may do your pleasure with them, for they have governed us according to their wills.’

The king was advised by his lords to grant his pardon to all these towns: on condition, however, that they should pay him, as part of his expenses in this war, sixty thousand francs. All the provisions were to be given up, and whatever cattle might be found in the fields; but they were assured that their towns should neither be burnt nor pillaged. This was very satisfactory to them, and they greatly thanked the king and his council. They were much rejoiced on finding they had escaped so well; but the governors of Philip von Artaveld, who had been carried thither, were beheaded on the bridge of Ypres.

No mention whatever was made in these treaties and submissions of the earl of Flanders: nor was he, or any one of his court, ever summoned to the councils of the king. If he was displeased at this I am ignorant, but during the whole expedition he was treated in the same manner.

his people were permitted to quit the  
battalion which was posted by orders

ders of the master of the cross-bows, on the wings, although they were Flemings. It was also ordered by the king, under pain of death, that no one in the army should speak Flemish, nor carry any stick bound with iron.

---

## CHAP. XL.

THE KING OF FRANCE LODGES IN YPRES—PETER DU BOIS PREVENTS BRUGES FROM SURRENDERING TO THE KING.—PHILIP VON ARTAVELD ASSEMBLES HIS FORCES TO COMBAT THE FRENCH.

**W**HILE the king and his whole army were on mount Ypres, many markets were there held, and plenty of pillage was sold to those of Lille, Douay, and Tournay; indeed to all who wished to buy. A piece of cloth of Vexin, Malines, Poperingue or Commines, was sold for one franc. People were clothed there too cheaply.

Some Bretons and other pillagers, determined on gain, went in large bodies, and loaded carts and horses with their booty of cloths, linen, knives, money in gold and silver, dishes and plates of silver wherever they found them, which they sent, well packed up, to a place of safety on the other side of the Lis, or by their servants into France.

The king and all the lords came to Ypres,  
where

where they quartered themselves as well as they could, and in as great numbers as the town would hold. They remained there to refresh themselves four or five days.

The inhabitants of Bruges had received information of the conduct of the king, that he was at Ypres, and how the whole country, as far as Gravelines, had submitted to him. They were doubtful whether to negotiate with the king, or let it alone: however, for the present they did nothing. The principal cause which withheld them from surrendering was the great number of men at arms which Philip von Artaveld had with him from their town; for there were at least seven thousand at the siege of Oudenarde; and their principal citizens were at Ghent as hostages, in order that Peter du Bois might more easily govern the place.

Besides, Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuijtre were in the town, who comforted them, saying, 'My good gentlemen, do not be alarmed if the king of France is come to Ypres: you know that formerly the whole power of France was sent by king Philip to Courtray\*, and could not withstand the courage of our fathers, for his whole army was slain and defeated. Know then, that this army shall in like manner be destroyed; for Philip von Artaveld, with an immense force, will not leave things thus without combating the king. It may very well happen,

—————

\* Courtray. The battle 1302.

that



that from the good cause we are engaged in, and the good fortune which follows Ghent, Philip may defeat the king, so that not one shall escape or recross the river, but the whole country which has submitted will be instantly reconquered. Thus will you remain like true and loyal men in your franchises, and in the grace of Philip and of us Ghent men.'

With such speeches as this, Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuijtre daily harangued the men of Bruges, and restrained them from entering into any treaty with the king of France.

While these things were going on, the citizens of Ghent, with sir William Fermiton\*, arrived at Calais, from England, to conclude and seal those treaties and agreements which the English wished to enter into with the Flemings. Sir John Devereux, governor of Calais, sent for them, and told them, 'that they could not continue their journey at that time, for the king of France was at Ypres, and that all the country, from Calais to Ypres, had surrendered to him. We shall shortly have more news: for it is reported that Philip von Artaveld is assembling his forces to

---

\* Fermiton. Froissart before calls him Fremeton. I should have supposed this person was sir William Farendon, or Framp-ton, if, in the Rolles François, the names of those sent by Richard had not been particularly named, as may be seen underneath.

Ann. Dom. 1382-1383. Membrana 4.

'De potestate data Johanni Devereux, Briano de Stapilton, Willielmo Ermyn, & Johanni de Burley, ad tractandum cum comiti Flandriæ & gentibus ibidem de debatis, & de attemptatis reformandis.'—Data apud Westminster, 16th May.

combat

combat the king of France, and we shall see who will have the best of it. Should the Flemings be beaten, you have nothing to do in Flanders; and if the king of France be defeated, it is all our own. 'This,' said the English knight, 'you may depend upon as truth.' The intelligence detained the citizens of Ghent and Sir William Fermiton.

We will now return to Philip, and say what he was doing. Being eager to combat the king of France, as he plainly shewed, he ordered, on his arrival at Ghent, every man capable of bearing arms, after leaving a sufficient garrison in the town, to follow him. All obeyed; for he gave them to understand, that by the grace of God, they would defeat the French, be lords of Ghent, and rank as sovereigns among other nations.

Philip von Artaveld carried with him about ten thousand men as the *arriere-ban*: he had before sent to Bruges, Damme, Ardembourg, Sluys, to the sea-coasts, the Quatre Mestiers, and countlewickes of Grammont, Dendremonde, and Aloft, and had raised from those places about thirty thousand more. He and his whole army were quartered one night before Oudenarde: on the morrow they marched away, and came before Courtray: he had with him about fifty thousand men.

The king of France received intelligence, that Philip von Artaveld was approaching, and, as it was said, with full sixty thousand men. Upon this, the van-guard set off from Ypres, under the command

command of the constable and marshals of France, and encamped a league and a half from Ypres, between Rollers and Rosebecque: on the morrow, the king and all the lords, with the main battalion and rear-guard, quartered themselves there also.

I must say that these lords, whilst they were in the field, suffered greatly; for it was in the heart of winter, the beginning of December, and it rained every day. They slept on the roads every night, for they were daily and hourly in expectation of a battle: it was commonly said in the army, 'They will come to-morrow;' which they believed, from the news the foragers brought when they returned from their excursions.

The king was quartered in the midst of his army. The lords of France were much vexed at Philip for delaying, for they were very impatient of being out in such bad weather. It should be known, that with the king was all the flower of French knighthood: it was therefore highly presumptuous in Philip von Artaveld and the Flemings to think of fighting with them; for if they had been satisfied with continuing their siege of Oudenarde, and had slightly entrenched themselves, the French, considering the wetness of the season, would never have marched to seek them; and, if they had done so, they would have combated them under the greatest disadvantages. But Philip was so vain of the good fortune he had met with at Bruges, that he thought nothing could withstand him,  
and

and he hoped he should be lord of the world. No other thoughts had he, and was nothing afraid of the king of France nor his army; for, if he had entertained any fears, he would not have done that which he did, as you shall hear related.

---

## CHAP. XLI.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD, HAVING ENTERTAINED HIS CAPTAINS AT SUPPER, GIVES THEM INSTRUCTIONS HOW THEY ARE TO ACT ON THE MORROW AT THE BATTLE OF ROSEBECQUE.—WONDERFUL APPEARANCES IN THE HEAVENS ARE SEEN DURING THIS NIGHT.

PHILIP von Artaveld, with his whole army, on the Wednesday evening preceding the battle, was encamped in a handsome position, tolerably strong, between a ditch and grove, and with so good a hedge in front that they could not easily be attacked. It was between the hill and town of Rosebecque where the king was quartered.

That same evening, Philip gave a magnificent supper to his captains at his quarters; for he had ~~where-withal~~ to do so, as his provisions followed

When the supper was over, he addressed ~~in~~ these words: 'My fair gentlemen, you are

are my companions in this expedition, and I hope to-morrow we shall have something to do; for the king of France, who is impatient to meet and fight with us, is quartered at Rosebecque. I therefore beg of you to be loyal, and not alarmed at any thing you shall see or hear; for we are combating in a just cause, to preserve the franchises of Flanders, and for our right. Admonish your men to behave well, and draw them up in such manner that, by this means and our courage, we may obtain the victory. To-morrow, through God's grace, we shall not find any lord to combat with us, or any who will dare take the field, unless he mean to remain there, and we shall gain greater honour than if we could have depended on the support of the English; for, if they had been with us, they alone would have gained all the reputation. The whole flower of the French nobility is with the king, for he has not left one behind: order, therefore, your men not to grant quarter to any one, but to kill all who fall in their way. By this means we shall remain in peace; for I will and command, under pain of death, that no prisoners be made, except it be the king of France. With regard to the king, I wish to support him, as he is but a child and ought to be forgiven; for he knows not what he does, and acts according as he is instructed: we will carry him to Ghent and teach him Flemish; but as for dukes, earls and other men at arms, kill them all. The common people of France will never be angry with us for so doing; for



they wish, as I am well assured, that not one should ever return to France, and it shall be so.'

His companions who were present at this discourse, and who were from the different towns in Flanders and the country of Bruges, agreed to this proposal, which they thought a proper one, and with one voice replied to Philip, 'You say well, and thus shall it be.' They then took leave of Philip, and each man returned to his quarters, to order his men how they were to act conformably to the instructions they had just had. Thus passed the night in the army of Philip: but about midnight, as I have been informed, there happened a most wonderful event, and such that I have never heard any thing equal to it related.

When these Flemish captains had retired, and all gone to their quarters to repose, the night being far advanced, those upon guard fancied they heard a great noise towards the Mont d'Or. Some of them were sent to see what it could be, and if the French were making any preparations to attack them in the night. On their return, they reported, they had been as far as the place whence the noise came, but that they had discovered nothing.

This noise, however, was still heard, and it seemed to some of them that their enemies were on the mount about a league distant: this was also the opinion of a damsel from Ghent whom Philip von Artaveld had carried with him, on this expedition, as his sweetheart.

Whilst Philip was sleeping under his tent on a coverlid,

coverlid near the coal-fire, this damsel went out of the tent about midnight, to examine the sky, and see what sort of weather it was and the time of night, for she was unable to sleep. She looked towards Rosebecque, and saw, in divers parts of the sky, smoke and sparks of fire flying about, caused by the fires the French were making under hedges and bushes. This woman listened attentively, and thought she heard a great noise between their army and that of the French, and also the cry of Montjoye and several other cries; and it seemed to her that they came from the Mont d'Or, between the camp and Rosebecque. She was exceedingly frightened, returned to the tent, awakened Philip, and said to him,—‘Sir, rise instantly and arm yourself; for I have heard a great noise on the Mont d'Or, which I believe to be made by the French who are coming to attack you.’

Philip at these words arose, and wrapping himself in a gown, took a battle-axe and went out of his tent to listen to this noise. In like manner as she had heard it, Philip did the same; and it seemed to him as if there were a great tournament. He directly returned to his tent, and ordered his trumpet to be sounded to awaken the army.

As soon as the sound of the trumpet was heard, it was known to be his. Those of the guard in front of the camp armed themselves, and sent some of their companions to Philip to know what he wished to have done, as he was thus early arming himself. On their arrival,

he wanted to send them to the part whence the noise had come, to find out what it could be; but they reported that that had already been done, and that there was no cause found for it. Philip was much astonished; and they were greatly blamed, that having heard a noise towards the enemy's quarters, they had remained quiet. 'Ha,' said they to Philip, 'in truth we did hear a noise towards the Mont d'Or, and we sent to know what it could be; but those who had been ordered thither, reported that there was nothing to be found or seen. Not having seen any positive appearance of a movement of the enemy, we were unwilling to alarm the army lest we should be blamed for it.'

This speech of the guard somewhat appeased Philip; but in his own mind he marvelled much what it could be. Some said it was the devils of hell running and dancing about the place where the battle was to be, for the abundance of prey they expected.

Neither Philip von Artaveld nor the Flemings were quite at their ease after this alarm. They were suspicious of having been betrayed and surprised. They armed themselves leisurely with whatever they had, made large fires in their quarters, and breakfasted comfortably, for they had victuals in abundance.

About an hour before day, Philip said; 'I think it right that we march into the plain and draw up our men; because should the French advance to attack us, we ought not to be unprepared, nor in disorder, but properly drawn  
up

up like men, knowing well what we are to do.' All obeyed this order, and, quitting their quarters, marched to a heath beyond the grove. There was in front a wide ditch newly made, and in their rear quantities of brambles, junipers and shrubs. They drew up at their leisure in this strong position, and formed one large battalion thick and strong. By the reports from the constables they were about fifty thousand, all chosen men, who valued not their lives. Among them were about sixty English archers, who, having stolen away from their companions at Calais, to gain greater pay from Philip, had left behind them their armour in their quarters.

Every thing being arranged, each man took to his arms. The horses, baggage, women and varlets were dismissed: but Philip von Artaveld had his page mounted on a superb courser, worth five hundred florins, which he had ordered to attend him, to display his state, and to mount if a pursuit of the French should happen, in order that he might enforce the commands which he had given to kill all. It was with this intention that Philip had posted him by his side. Philip had likewise from the town of Ghent about nine thousand men, well armed, whom he placed near his person; for he had greater confidence in them than in any of the others: they therefore, with Philip at their head with banners displayed, were in front; and those from Alost and Grammont were next: then the men from Courtray, Bruges, Damme, Sluys and the Fronconate. They

were

were armed, for the greater part, with bludgeons, iron caps, jerkins and with gloves, *de fer de baleine*. Each man had a staff with an iron point, and bound round with iron. The different townsmen wore liveries and arms, to distinguish them from one another. Some had jackets of blue and yellow, others wore a welt of black on a red jacket, others chevroned with white on a blue coat, others green and blue, others lozenged with black and white, others quartered red and white, others all blue. Each carried the banners of their trades. They had also large knives hanging down from their girdles. In this state they remained, quietly waiting for day, which soon came.

I will now relate to you the proceedings of the French as fully as I have done those of the Flemings.

---

## CHAP. XLII.

KING CHARLES ENTERTAINS AT SUPPER HIS UN-  
CLES AND SOME OTHERS OF HIS PRINCIPAL  
BARONS, ON THE EVE OF THE BATTLE OF  
ROSEBECQUE. THE CONSTABLE DE CLISSON  
IS EXCUSED FROM ATTENDING THE KING'S  
PERSON DURING THE BATTLE.

THE king of France, and the lords with him, knew well that the Flemings were advancing, and that a battle must be the consequence; for no proposals for peace were offered, and all seemed to have made up their minds for an engagement. It had been promised on the Wednesday morning in the town



town of Ypres, that the men at arms should follow the king into the field, and post themselves according to the instructions they had received. Every one obeyed this order, and no man at arms, or even lusty varlet, remained in Ypres, except those appointed to guard the horses, which had been conducted to Ypres when their lords dismounted. However, the van-guard had many with them for the use of their light troops, and to reconnoitre the battalions of the enemy; for to them they were of more service than to the others.

The French on this Wednesday remained in the plain pretty near to Rosebecque, where the lords and captains were busy in arranging their plans. In the evening the king gave a supper to his three uncles, the constable of France, the lord de Coucy, and to some other foreign lords from Brabant, Hainault, Holland, Zealand, Germany, Lorraine and Savoy, who had come thither to serve him. He, as well as his uncles, thanked them much for the good services they had done and were willing to do for them. The earl of Flanders this evening commanded the guard of the king's battalion, and had under him six hundred lances, and twelve hundred other men.

After the supper which the king had given on the Wednesday to these lords, and when they had retired, the constable of France remained to converse with the king and his uncles. It had been arranged in the council with the king, that the constable, sir Oliver de Clifson, should resign his constableship for the mor-

row (as they fully expected a battle) and that, for the day only, the lord de Coucy was to take his place, and sir Oliver remain near the king's person: so that when the constable was taking his leave, the king said to him, as he had been instructed, in a courteous and agreeable manner; 'Constable, we will that you resign to us, for to-morrow only, your office; for we have appointed another, and you shall remain near our person.'

These words, which were new to the gallant constable, surprised him so much, that he replied; 'Most dear lord, I well know that I never can be more highly honoured than in guarding your person; but, dear lord, it will give great displeasure to my companions, and those of the van-guard, if they do not see me with them: and we may lose more than we can gain by it. I do not pretend that I am so valiant, that the business will be done by me alone; but I declare, dear lord, under the correction of your noble council, that for these last fifteen days, I have been solely occupied how I could add to your honour, to that of your army, and to my own office. I have instructed the army in the manner in which they were to be drawn up: and if, to-morrow, under the guidance of God, we engage, and they do not see me; or, if I fail in giving them advice and support, I who have always been accustomed in such cases so to do, they will be thunder-struck; some may say I am a hypocrite, and have done this sily, in order to escape from the first blows. I therefore entreat of you, most dear

dear lord, that you would not interfere in what has been arranged and ordered for the best, for I must say you will gain the more by it.'

The king did not know what answer to make to this speech, any more than those present who had heard it. At last the king said, very properly, 'Constable, I do not mean to say that it has been any way thought you have not, on every occasion, most fully acquitted yourself, and will still do so; but my late lord and father loved you more than any other person, and had the greatest confidence in you: it is from this love and confidence which he reposed in you that I should wish to have you on this occasion near to me, and in my company.'

'Very dear lord,' replied the constable, 'you will be so well attended by such valiant men, all having been settled with the greatest deliberation, that it cannot any way be amended, so that you and your council ought to be satisfied with it. I therefore beg of you, for the love of God, most dear lord, that you will permit me to execute my office; and to-morrow your successes shall be such that your friends will be rejoiced, and your enemies enraged.'

To this the king only answered; 'Constable, I will it be so: in God's name, and in the name of St. Denis, act as becomes your office. I will not say one word more to you on the subject; for you see clearer in this business than I do, or those who first proposed it. Be to-morrow at mass.' 'Willingly, sir,' replied the constable. He took leave of the king, who saluted him, and returned to his quarters, with his attendants and companions.

## CHAP. XLIII.

PHILIP VON ARTAVELD AND HIS FLEMINGS QUIT THE STRONG POSITION THEY HAD TAKEN IN THE MORNING, TO ENCAMP ON MONT D'OR, NEAR TO YPRES.—THE CONSTABLE AND ADMIRAL OF FRANCE, WITH THE BASTARD OF LANGRES, SET OUT TO RECONNOITRE THEIR SITUATION.

ON the Thursday morning all the men at arms of the army, the van-guard, the rear-guard and the king's battalion, armed themselves completely, except their helmets, as if they were about to engage: for the lords well knew the day could not pass without a battle, from the reports of the foragers on the Wednesday evening, who had seen the Flemings on their march demanding a battle.

The king of France heard mass, as did the other lords, who all devoutly prayed to God, that the day might turn out to their honour. In the morning there was a thick mist, which continued so long that no one could see the distance of an acre: the lords were much vexed at this, but they could not remedy it.

After the king's mass, which had been attended by the constable and other great lords, it was ordered that those valiant knights sir Oliver de Clifton constable of France, sir John de Vienne admiral of France and sir William de Poitiers bastard of Langres, who had been long  
used

used to arms, should reconnoitre the position of the Flemings, and report to the king and his uncles the truth of it: during which time, the lord d'Albreth and sir Hugh de Châtillon were employed in forming the battalions.

These three knights, leaving the king, set off on the flower of their steeds and rode towards that part where they thought they should find the Flemings, and towards the spot where they had encamped the preceding night.

You must know that on the Thursday morning, when the thick mist came on, the Flemings having, as you have before heard, marched, before day-break, to this strong position, had there remained until about eight o'clock, when, not seeing nor hearing any thing of the French, their numbers excited in them pride and self-sufficiency; and their captains, as well as others, began thus to talk among themselves: 'What are we about thus standing still, and almost frozen with cold? Why do we not advance with courage, since such is our inclination, and seek our enemies to combat them? We remain here to no purpose, for the French will never come to look for us. Let us at least march to Mont d'Or, and take advantage of the mountain.

Many such speeches were made, and they all consented to march to Mont d'Or, which was between them and the French. In order to avoid the ditch in their front, they turned the grove and entered the plain. Whilst they were thus on their march round the grove, the three  
knights



knights came so opportunely that they reconnoitred them at their ease, and rode by the side of their battalions, which were again formed within a bow-shot from them. When they had considered them on the left, they did the same on the right, and thus carefully and fully examined them.

The Flemings saw them plainly, but paid not any attention to them; nor did any one quit his ranks. The three knights were well mounted, and so much used to this business that they cared not for them. Philip said to his captains,—‘ Our enemies are near at hand: let us draw up here in battle-array for the combat. I have seen strong appearances of their intentions: for these three horsemen who pass and repass have reconnoitred us, and are still doing so.’

Upon this, the Flemings halted on the Mont d’Or, and formed in one thick and strong battalion; when Philip said aloud,—‘ Gentlemen, when the attack begins, remember our enemies were defeated and broken at the battle of Bruges by our keeping in a compact body. Be careful not to open your ranks, but let every man strengthen himself as much as possible and bear his staff right before him. You will intermix your arms, so that no one may break you, and march straight forward with a good step, without turning to the right or left; and act together, so that, when the conflict begins, you may throw your bombardes and shoot with your cross-bows in such manner that our enemies may be thunderstruck with surprise.’

When

When Philip had formed his men in battle array, and told them how they were to act, he went to the wing of his army in which he had the greatest confidence. Near him was his page on the courser, to whom he said,—‘Go, wait for me at that bush out of bow-shot; and, when thou shalt see the discomfiture of the French and the pursuit begin, bring me my horse and shout my cry; they will make way for thee to come to me, for I wish to be the first in the pursuit.’

The page, on these words, left his master and did as he had ordered him. Philip placed near him, on the side of this wing, forty English archers whom he had in his pay. Now, if it be considered how well Philip had arranged this business, I am of opinion, and in this I am joined by several others, that he well knew the art of war: but in one instance, which I will relate, he acted wrong. It was in quitting the first strong position he had taken in the morning; for they would never have fought to fight him there, as it would have been too much to their disadvantage; but he wished to shew that his people were men of courage, and had little fear of their enemies.

## CHAP. XLIV.

THE BATTLE OF ROSEBECQUE, BETWEEN THE  
FRENCH AND FLEMINGS.—PHILIP VON ARTA-  
VELD IS SLAIN, AND HIS WHOLE ARMY DE-  
FEATED.

**T**HE three knights returned to the king of France and to his battalions, which had already been formed and were marching slowly in order of battle; for there were many prudent and brave men, who had been long accustomed to arms, in the van-guard, in the king's battalion, and in the rear-guard, who knew well what they were to do, for they were the flower of chivalry in Christendom. Way was made for them; and the lord de Clifton spoke first, bowing to the king from his horse, and taking off the beaver he wore, saying, 'Sire, rejoice: these people are our own, and our lusty varlets will fight well with them.' 'Constable,' replied the king, 'God assist you! now advance, in the name of God and St. Denis.'

The knights, before mentioned as the king's body-guard, now drew up in good order. The king created many new knights, as did different lords in their battalions, so that several new banners were displayed.

It was ordered, that when the engagement was about to commence, the battalion of the king, with the oriflamme of France, should march to the front of the army, that the van and rear guards should form the two wings as speedily as possible, and by this means inclose  
and

and straiten the Flemings, who were drawn up in the closest order, and gain a great advantage over them. Notice of this intended movement was sent to the rear-guard, of which the count d'Eu, the count de Blois, the count de St. Pol, the count de Harcourt, the count de Châtillon and the lord de la Fere were commanders.

The young lord de Haurel displayed his banner this day before the count de Blois, who also knighted sir Thomas d'Istre, and the bastard sir James de Hameth. According to the report of the heralds, there were this day created four hundred and sixty-seven knights.

The lord de Clifton, sir John de Vienne and sir William de Langres, having made their report to the king, left him and went to their post in the van-guard. Shortly afterwards, the oriflamme was displayed by sir Peter de Villiers who bore it. Some say (as they find it written) that it was never before displayed against Christians, and that it was a matter of great doubt during the march whether it should be displayed or not. However, the matter having been fully considered, they resolved to display it, because the Flemings followed opinions contrary to that of pope Clement, and called themselves Urbanists; for which the French said they were rebellious and out of the pale of the church. This was the principal cause why it had been brought and displayed in Flanders.

The oriflamme\* was a most excellent banner,

---

\* The oriflamme was a sacred banner carefully preserved

ner, and had been sent from heaven with great mystery: it is a sort of gonfanon\*, and is of much comfort in the day of battle to those who see it. Proof was made of its virtues at this time; for all the morning there was so thick a fog that with difficulty could they see each other, but the moment the knight had displayed it and raised his lance in the air this fog instantly dispersed, and the sky was as clear as it had been during the whole year.

The lords of France were much rejoiced when they saw this clear day, and the sun shine, so that they could look about them on all sides.

It was a fine sight to view these banners, helmets and beautiful emblazoned arms: the army kept a dead silence, not uttering a sound, but eyed the large battalion of Flemings before them, who were marching in a compact body, with their staves advanced in the air, which looked like spears, and, so great were their numbers, they had the appearance of a wood.

The lord d'Estonnenort told me, that he saw (as well as several others) when the oriflamme was displayed, and the fog had dispersed, a white dove fly many times round the king's battalion. When it had made several circles, and the engagement

of a red colour, and had the name of St. Dionysius on it. This was never called out but on the most urgent occasions, when the king himself was present, and to be displayed solely against heretics.

\* Gonfanon was a square pennon fixed to the end of a lance: such are now used in Italy: and the bearer was called Gonfanonier, or Gonfaloniere.

was



was about to begin, it perched on one of the king's banners: this was considered as a fortunate omen.

The Flemings advanced so near that they commenced a cannonade with bars of iron, and quarrels headed with brass. Thus was the battle begun by Philip and his men against the king's battalion, which at the outset was very sharp: for the Flemings, inflamed with pride and courage, came on with vigour, and, pushing with shoulders and breasts like enraged wild boars, they were so strongly interlaced one with the other, that they could not be broken, nor their ranks forced.

By this attack, of cannons and bombardes, the lord d'Albaruin, banneret, Morlet de Haruin, and James Doré, on the side of the French, were first slain, and the king's battalion obliged to fall back. But the van and rear guards pushed forward, and, by inclosing the Flemings, straitened them much. Upon the two wings these men at arms made their attack: and, with their well tempered lances of Bourdeaux, pierced through their coats of mail to the flesh. All who were assailed by them drew back to avoid the blows, for never would those that escaped return to the combat: by this means, the Flemings were so straitened that they could not use their staves to defend themselves. They lost both strength and breath, and, falling upon one another, were stifled to death without striking a blow.

Philip von Artaveld was surrounded, wounded by spears, and beaten down, with numbers of the Ghent men who were his guards. When

Philip's page saw the ill success of his countrymen, being well mounted on his courser, he set off, and left his master, for he could not give him any assistance, and returned towards Courtray, on his way to Ghent.

When the Flemings found themselves inclosed on two sides, there was an end to the business, for they could not assist each other. The king's battalion, which had been somewhat disordered at the beginning, now recovered.

The men at arms knocked down the Flemings with all their might. They had well sharpened battle-axes, with which they cut through helmets and disbrained heads: others gave such blows with leaden maces that nothing could withstand them. Scarcely were the Flemings overthrown before the pillagers advanced, who, mixing with the men at arms, made use of the large knives they carried, and finished slaying whoever fell into their hands, without more mercy than if they had been so many dogs. The clattering on the helmets, by the axes and leaden maces, was so loud, that nothing else could be heard for the noise. I was told that if all the armourers of Paris and Bruxelles had been there working at their trade, they could not have made a greater noise than these combatants did on the helmets of their enemies; for they struck with all their force, and set to their work with the greatest good will.

Some, indeed, pressed too forward into the crowd, and were surrounded and slain: in particular sir Louis de Goufalz, a knight from Berry, and sir Fleton de Reniel. There were several  
more,

more, which was a great pity; but in such a battle as this, where such numbers were engaged, it is not possible for victory to be obtained without being dearly bought; for young knights and squires, eager to gain renown, willingly run into perils in hopes of honour.

The crowd was now so great, and so dangerous for those inclosed in it, that the men at arms, if not instantly assisted, could not raise themselves when once down. By this were several of the French killed and smothered; but they were not many, for when in danger they helped each other. There was a large and high mount of the Flemings who were slain; and never was there seen so little blood spilt at so great a battle, where such numbers were killed.

When those in the rear saw the front fail, and that they were defeated, they were greatly astonished, and began to throw away their staves and armour, to disband and fly towards Courtray and other places, not having any care but to save themselves if possible. The Bretons and French pursued them into ditches, alder groves and heaths, where they fought with and slew them. Numbers were killed in the pursuit, between the field of battle and Courtray, whither they were flying in their way to Ghent.

This battle on Mont d'Or took place the 27th day of November, on the Thursday before Advent, in the year of grace 1382; and at that time the king of France was fourteen years of age.

## CHAP. XLV.

THE NUMBER OF SLAIN AT THE BATTLE OF ROSEBECQUE AND PURSUIT AFTERWARDS.—PHILIP VON ARTAVELD IS HANGED AFTER HE WAS DEAD.—THE SIEGE OF OUDENARDE IS RAISED.—PETER DU BOIS RETREATS TO GHENT.—THE KING OF FRANCE FIXES HIS QUARTERS IN THE TOWN OF COURTRAY.

**T**HUS were the Flemings defeated on Mont d'Or, their pride humbled, and Philip von Artaveld slain; and with him nine thousand men from Ghent and its dependencies, (according to the report of the heralds) on the spot, not including those killed in the pursuit, which amounted to twenty-five thousand more. This battle, from the beginning to the defeat, did not last more than half an hour. The event was very honourable to all Christendom, as well as to the nobility and gentry; for had those low-bred peasants succeeded, there would have been unheard-of cruelties practised, to the destruction of all gentlemen, by the common people who had every where risen in rebellion. Now, let us think of the Parisians: what they will say, when they hear the news of the defeat of the Flemings at Rosebecque, and the death of Philip von Artaveld their



their leader? They will not be much rejoiced more than several other large towns.

When this battle was completely finished, they allowed time for the pursuers to collect together, and sounded the trumpets of retreat, for each to retire to his quarters, as was proper. The van-guard halted beyond the king's battalion, where the Flemings were quartered on the Wednesday, and made themselves very comfortable; for there was a sufficiency of provision in the king's army, besides the purveyances which came from Ypres. They made, the ensuing night, brilliant fires in different places, of the staves of the Flemings: whoever wished for any could collect sufficient to load his back.

When the king of France arrived at his camp, where his magnificent pavilion of red silk had been pitched, and when he had been disarmed, his uncles, and many barons of France came, as was right, to attend on him. Philip von Artaveld then came into his mind, and he said: 'If Philip is dead or alive, I should like to see him.' They replied; 'they would have a search made for him.' It was proclaimed through the army, that whoever should discover the body of Philip von Artaveld, should receive one hundred francs. Upon this the varlets examined the dead, who were all stripped, or nearly so, and Philip through avarice, was so strictly sought after, that he was found by a varlet, who had formerly served him some time, and who knew him perfectly. He was dragged before the king's pavilion. The king looked at him for some time, as did the  
other



other lords. He was turned over and over to see if he had died of wounds, but they found none that could have caused his death. He had been squeezed in the crowd, and, falling into a ditch, numbers of Ghent men fell upon him, who died in his company.

When they had sufficiently viewed him, he was taken from thence and hanged on a tree. Such was the end of Philip von Artaveld.

Sir Daniel de Haluin who, with his knights and squires, had held out Oudenarde so highly to his honour, knowing well that the king of France was in Flanders, and that there would be a battle with the Flemings, lighted, late at night on the Wednesday preceding the battle, four torches, which he hoisted above the walls, as a signal that the siege would be raised.

About midnight, on the Thursday, news was brought to the lord of Harzelles and the others, that their army had been completely routed, and Philip von Artaveld slain. Upon this they instantly broke up the siege, and marched away for Ghent, leaving behind them the greater part of their stores, each running as fast as he could to Ghent. The garrison of Oudenarde was ignorant of this retreat, and remained so until the morrow-morning. On being informed of it they sallied out, and carried into Oudenarde great pillage of knives, carriages and stores, which they found hid.

On Thursday evening, intelligence arrived at Bruges of the defeat of the army, and of every thing being lost. They were more astonished than

than ever, and said among themselves; 'Our destruction is now come upon us: if the Bretons should advance hither and enter our town, we shall be pillaged and murdered, for they will spare none.' Upon this, the townspeople, of both sexes, collected their jewels and most precious effects, and began to embark in vessels, to save themselves by sea, in Holland or Zealand, or wherever fortune should carry them. In this manner were they employed four days: and you would not have found in all the hôtels of Bruges one silver spoon. Every thing was packed up for fear of the Bretons.

When Peter du Bois, who was confined to his bed from the wounds he had received at Commines, heard of the defeat of the army, and death of Philip von Artaveld, and how much the inhabitants of Bruges were alarmed, he did not think himself very safe, and therefore declared he would set out from Bruges and return to Ghent; for he thought that Ghent would be much frightened: he therefore ordered a litter for himself, as he could not ride.

You must know, that when the news arrived at Ghent of the great loss of their men, the death of Philip von Artaveld, and the destruction of their army, they were so much cast down, that if the French on the day of the battle, or even on the Friday or Saturday, had advanced to Ghent before Peter du Bois arrived there, they would have opened the gates to them, without any opposition, and submitted to their mercy.

But

But the French did not attend to this, thinking themselves perfectly masters since Philip was dead ; and that the Ghent men would, of their own accord, surrender themselves to the king's mercy. This measure, however, they did not adopt. On the contrary, they alone carried on the war with greater vigour and bitterness than before, as you will hear related in the continuance of this history.

On the Friday the king dislodged from Rosebecque, on account of the stench of the dead : he was advised to advance to Courtray to refresh himself. The halze\* and some knights and squires who well knew the country, mounting their horses, entered the town of Courtray full gallop ; for there was not any opposition made. The women, both rich and poor, and many men also, ran into cellars and churches to save themselves, so that it was a pitiful fight.

Those who first entered Courtray gained considerably by the pillage. The French and Bretons next came there, and lodged themselves as they entered. The king of France made his entry the first day of December.

A strict search was now made over the town for the Flemings who had hid themselves, and no man was admitted to mercy, for the French hated them as much as they were hated by the townspeople, on account of a battle which had

---

\* This name has puzzled me very much : I cannot find it in any dictionary. It is called, both in MSS. and print, Hafe, Haze, Hazale and Halze.

formerly

formerly been fought before Courtray, when the count Robert d'Artois and all the flower of the French nobility were slain.

The king had heard that there was in a chapel of the virgin in Courtray five hundred gilt spurs, which had belonged to the knights of France who had perished at the battle of Courtray in the year 1302, and that the inhabitants every year kept a grand solemnity, by way of triumph, for the success of this battle. He declared he would make them pay for it; and, on his departure, would give up the town to fire and flame; so that they should remember, in times to come, that the king of France had been there.

Soon after the arrival of the king and his lords at Courtray, sir Daniel de Haluin, with fifty lances from the garrison of Oudenarde, came thither to pay their respects to the king. They were very graciously received by him and his lords; and, after staying there one day, they returned to their companions in Oudenarde.

## CHAP. XLVI.

BRUGES SUBMITS TO THE KING'S MERCY.—

THE COUNT DE BLOIS GUARDS THE COUNTRY OF HAINAULT FROM BEING PILLAGED.

—THE INHABITANTS OF GHENT GAIN COURAGE FROM PETER DU BOIS.

**T**HE Bretons and the van-guard shewed very plainly the great desire they had to march to Bruges and to divide the spoil among themselves, for they were quartered between Tourout and Bruges. The earl of Flanders, who had an affection for the town of Bruges, and who would have been sorry for its destruction, had strong suspicions of their designs. He had received intelligence of what was going forward in Bruges, and how very much they were frightened. He therefore took compassion on them, and spoke to his son, the duke of Burgundy, remonstrating with him, that if the town of Bruges should throw itself on the king's mercy, it ought not to be refused: for, if the Bretons or others were permitted to enter it, it would be irrecoverably ruined. The duke agreed to this. Now it happened that, during the king's residence at Courtray, the inhabitants of Bruges, who were in great alarms and knew not whether to quit their town or wait the event, determined to send two friars to the king, to solicit a passport



port for twelve of the principal inhabitants to wait on his majesty and lay their case before him.

The monks came to Courtray and spoke with the king and his council, and the earl of Flanders, who softened the business as much as he could. The king granted the passport for the twelve citizens to come and return, and said he would willingly hear them.

On the return of the monks to Bruges, twelve deputies set out, under the passport they had brought, and came to the king at Courtray, where they found him accompanied by his uncles. They cast themselves on their knees, and entreated him to accept them for his subjects; that they were his men, and the town was at his mercy; but begged him, for the love of God, to have pity on them, and not suffer the town to be destroyed or pillaged; for, if it were, too many persons would be ruined. With regard to having opposed their lord, they had been forced to it by Philip von Artaveld and the Ghent men; for they had always loyally acquitted themselves to the earl.

The king heard this speech through the interpretation of the earl of Flanders, who was present, and who on his knees entreated for them.

It was explained to the citizens of Bruges, that it would be necessary to satisfy the Bretons and men at arms who were encamped between Tourout and Bruges, and that there was no other means of doing so but with money.

Upon this, negotiations were entered upon

as to the sum : at first, two hundred thousand francs were demanded ; but it was reduced at last to six score thousand francs, sixty thousand of which they were to pay down, and the remainder at Candlemas ; for which the king assured them peace ; but they surrendered themselves simply as liege men to the king of France by faith and homage.

By this means was the good town of Bruges prevented from being pillaged. The Bretons were much vexed at it, for they thought to have had their share ; and some of them said, when they heard peace had been made, that this war in Flanders was not worth any thing ; that they had gained too little pillage, and that it did not end well for them ; adding,—‘ But when we return home, it shall be through the country of Hainault ; and duke Albert, who governs it, has not assisted his cousin the earl of Flanders, but has acted in a double manner. It will be right that we pay him a visit : for Hainault is a rich and plentiful country : besides, we shall not find any one to obstruct our passage, and we may there make amends for our losses and ill paid wages.’

There was a time when those of this opinion amounted to twelve hundred spears, Bretons, Burgundians, Savoyards and others. You may suppose the charming country of Hainault was in jeopardy. The gallant count de Blois, who was one of the greatest lords of the rear-guard, and of the king’s council, heard of this intended march, and that the Bretons, Burgundians and others, who only looked for pillage, menaced

naced the fair country of Hainault; he took immediate steps to prevent it, saying, it was not to be suffered that so fine a country should be overrun and pillaged.

He summoned to his lodgings his confins, the count de la Marche, the count de St. Pol, the lord de Coucy, the lord d'Anghien and several more, all holding lands in Hainault, and who had come thither to serve the king, and remonstrated with them, that they ought not by any means to suffer the good country of Hainault, whence they had sprung, and where they had estates, to be pillaged in any way whatever; for, with regard to the war, Hainault had not been in the least wanting, but had most loyally assisted the king in this expedition with its barons, and, before the king came into Flanders, it had aided the earl of Flanders with its knights and squires, who had shut themselves in Oudenarde and Dendremonde, at the risk of their lives and fortunes.

The count de Blois exerted himself so much, and gained so many partisans, that all those measures were broken, and Hainault remained in peace. This gallant lord performed another noble service. There was in Flanders a knight called the lord d'Esquemine, who from affection to a relation of his, called Daniel Buse, killed in Valenciennes by his own fault, had declared he would make war on and harrafs that town. He had done so, and threatened to insult it still more, being seconded by many friends inclined to evil; for it was reported that he had collected full five hundred spears, who would follow  
him

him into Hainault to attack the town of Valenciennes, in which they said he was justified. But when the count de Blois heard of it, he went to him nobly accompanied, and ordered the knight not to dare enter Hainault, nor to conduct any men at arms into the countries of his cousin duke Albert, otherwise he should pay dearly for it. This gallant count went further, and made the knight his particular friend, and obsequious to himself and the lord de Coucy; and thus was that town kept in peace. Such services did the count de Blois to Hainault and Valenciennes, for which he gained great love and affection, but particularly from Valenciennes.

The lords and the men at arms still remained in and about Courtray, for they knew not whether the king would march to Ghent or not. The French imagined, that when Bruges had surrendered itself to the king's mercy, Ghent would do the same, since it had lost its leader, and such numbers of men at the battle of Rosebecque. In truth, for three days, the inhabitants were well inclined so to do, and knew not how to act: to quit the town and leave every thing, or to send the keys to the king, and surrender themselves to his mercy. They were so completely cast down that there was neither union nor steadiness among them. The lord de Harzelles, though in the town, was incapable of giving them comfort.

When Peter du Bois arrived, he found the gates open without any guards, which much surprised him; and he asked, why they did not better



'better guard the town. Those who came to him, and who were much rejoiced at his arrival, replied; 'Ah, sir, what can we do? You know we have had our good captain slain; and, by an exact account, the town of Ghent has lost, without counting strangers, full nine thousand men. This loss touches us so nearly that we have no hopes left.'

'Ye foolish people,' answered Peter du Bois, 'are ye thus thunderstruck when the war is not near over, nor the town of Ghent so famous as she shall be? If Philip is dead, it has been by his own violence. Close your gates, and think of preparing to defend yourselves. Ye do not suppose that the king of France will come here this winter-time; and before the proper season shall arrive, we shall have gained reinforcements from our friends in Holland, Zealand, Guelderland, Brabant and other places. We can have men enough for our money. Francis Atremen, who is now in England, will soon return, and he and I will be your captains. The war has never been so serious, or so well conducted, as we will have it. We are much better alone than joined by all Flanders; for while we had the country with us, we knew not how to make war. Let us now attend to the business ourselves, and we shall perform greater exploits than have hitherto been done.'

By such speeches as this did Peter du Bois rally the cast-down inhabitants of Ghent, who would, without doubt, have surrendered themselves unconditionally to the king of France, if Peter du Bois had not been there. So much depends



depends upon the courage and ability of a single man.

When the Ghent men saw five or six days pass over without any attempt being made on their town, nor any appearance of a siege, they recovered their courage, and became more presumptuous than before.

---

## CHAP. XLVII.

THE TREATY BETWEEN THE ENGLISH AND FLEMINGS IS BROKEN.—THE KING OF FRANCE DEPARTS FROM FLANDERS.

**Y**OU have before heard how sir William Fremiton, having been sent by the king of England and his council with letters to the principal towns in Flanders on the subject of the intended treaties between them, had remained at Calais, and with him Francis Atremen and the six citizens of Ghent. When the Flemings heard of the defeat at Rosebecque, they were so much astonished, that the English knight saw he had no occasion to proceed further, for there was an end of the treaty. He therefore took his letters without having sealed them, and returned to England as speedily as he could, to relate the particulars of this event.

The nobles of England were not sorry on hearing it; for they said, that if the commonalty of Flanders had been victorious over the king of France, and his nobility had been slain, the pride  
of

of the common people would have been so great that all gentlemen would have had cause to lament it, for appearances of insurrections had been shewn in England.

The Flemings, who had been sent to London with Francis Atremen, were much cast down, and, hastily embarking at Calais, sailed to Middlebourg in Zealand. The deputies returned to their different towns, and Francis Atremen and his companions got to Ghent as well as they were able, through Zealand, but not until the king of France had left Flanders.

During the residence of the king of France in Courtray, many councils were held, to determine whether they should lay siege to Ghent or not. The king was well inclined for so doing, as were the Bretons and Burgundians. But the lords of the council, as it was now the heart of winter, considered, that no effectual war could be carried on, and that the knights were much weakened and harraßed by the cold; that, as the rivers round Ghent were wide and deep, it would be time thrown away to attempt the siege: besides, the chiefs were also worn down by the rains, the cold, and lying on the ground, so that, every thing considered, the king was advised to return to Tournay, where he might recruit himself and keep his Christmas. Those from the more distant parts, such as Auvergne, Dauphiny, Savoy and Burgundy, were to march quietly into their own countries. But the king and his council wished the Bretons, Normans and French to remain with

him and the constable; for, as he could depend on them, he intended employing them against the Parisians, who had been so busy in forging armour, to make them behave better than they had hitherto done, since the coronation of the king.

When the king of France departed from Courtray, he was not forgetful, any more than his lords, of the gilt spurs which had been hung up in a church at Courtray, and which had belonged to the French nobility who had fallen with Robert d'Artois at the battle of Courtray. The king therefore ordered the town to be burnt and destroyed. The earl of Flanders, on hearing of this, went to the king, in hopes of remedying it, and flung himself on his knees, begging of him to recal his orders; but the king answered, he would do no such thing. The earl dared not renew his request, but went away to his lodgings before they were set on fire.

The duke of Burgundy had taken down a curious clock which struck the hours, the handsomest that was to be seen on either side of the sea, which he had caused to be packed up, and placed on carts with its bell, and carried to Dijon, where it was placed, and there strikes the hours day and night.

After the king had quitted the town, it was harshly treated; for it was burnt and destroyed without mercy: and many knights, squires, men at arms, fine children, both boys and girls, were carried away as slaves, to be ransomed. The king rode on to Tournay, where he was shewn every respect

respect due to him, and fixed his quarters at the abbey of Saint Martin. The inhabitants were all dressed in white with three green bars on one side: and proper houses were allotted to the lords. The king was at Saint Martins: and his attendants occupied one quarter of the town. The duke de Berry was lodged in the palace of the bishop; the duke de Bourbon at the crown; the duke of Burgundy at the Golden Head; the constable at St. James's Head.

Proclamation was made for none to do any damage to the good people of Tournay, under pain of death, nor take any thing without paying for it, nor to enter the country of Hainault with intent of doing mischief. All these orders were observed. The lords refreshed themselves there with their men; but those from the distant parts returned to their homes through Lille, Douay and Valenciennes. The count de Blois took leave of the king and his uncles, and of his companion the count d'Eu, and retired to his inheritance in Hainault. He stopped one day and night at Valenciennes, where he was magnificently entertained; for he had gained the affection of the inhabitants, as well in gratitude for the services he had rendered by preventing the Bretons, Burgundians and Savoyards, from putting their intentions into execution of overrunning the country, as in regard to sir Thierry d'Esquemine, who had long kept them in alarm, and who, by having put himself under the obedience of the count and the lord de Coucy, had given them peace.

The count de Blois left Valenciennes and went to Landrecies, where he passed some time, with the lady Mary his wife and his son Louis, in recovering himself from his fatigues. The following summer he went to Blois; but the countess and her son continued in Hainault, and lived the greater part of the time at Beaumont.

---

## CHAP. XLVIII.

VAIN ATTEMPTS MADE FOR PEACE BETWEEN THE KING OF FRANCE AND GHENT.—THE KING, ON HIS RETURN TO PARIS, ORDERS THE CHAINS TO BE TAKEN AWAY THAT BARRICADED THE STREETS.—HE SEVERELY PUNISHES THE PARISIANS.

**T**HE count de la Marche and sir James de Bourbon, his brother, left Tournay to refresh themselves at their castle in Hainault. The lord Guy de Laval, a Breton, went to Cheure in Hainault, which is divided between sir Robert de Namur and himself. The lord de Coucy stopped at Mortaigne on the Scheld, where he rested himself and his men: but the greater part of the time he was with the king at Tournay.

The count de St. Pol was commissioned to correct the Urbanists of the town, which was reported to contain many. Several were discovered, and wherever found, even in the church of  
Nôtre



Nôtre Dame, they were arrested, cast into prison, and paid dearly for their liberty. By this means the count de St. Pol amassed, in a very few days seven thousand francs: for none obtained their liberty without paying, or giving very good security for so doing.

During the king's residence at Tournay, the men of Ghent had a passport granted them to come thither and return. There were hopes they would have been pardoned; but, during the conferences which were holden, they were as proud and hardened as if they had been the conquerors at the battle of Rosebecque.

They declared, indeed, that they would willingly put themselves under the obedience of the king, and would form part of the domain of France, under the jurisdiction of Paris; but that they would never acknowledge for their lord earl Louis, because they could never love him for the great mischiefs he had done them.

Several attempts were made to obtain a peace between the king and his council with these deputies; but, notwithstanding the interference of some wise prelates, they could not get from them any other answer. They declared to the prelates, that if they were to live in such peril as would turn the town upside down for three or four years, they would never alter their minds. They were told they might return when they pleased: upon which, they departed from Tournay to Ghent, and things remained in a state of war.

The king of France and his lords took great pains

pains that all Flanders should become Clementists and obey pope Clement : but the principal towns were as strongly inclined to Urban as the earl, that they could not be moved. They replied, through the earl's council, that they would consider of it, and give a determined answer before Easter : the business, therefore, was held over till then.

The king of France kept his Christmas at Tournay : and, when he departed, he appointed the noble lord de Guistelles governor of Bruges, the lord de Saint Py governor of Ypres, the lord de Guistelles chief regent of Flanders, and fir John de Jumont governor of Courtray, whither the king sent two hundred Bretons and other men at arms, and to garrison Ardembourg. Sir William de Laumeghien was nominated to Oudenarde with about one hundred lances for his garrison. Thus were all the strong places in Flanders provided with men at arms and stores, to enable them to carry on the war during the winter upon the enemy's garrisons.

These things being arranged, the king set out from Tournay for Arras, attended by his uncles and the earl of Flanders. During the residence of the king at Arras, the city ran a great risk of being pillaged by the Bretons, to whom large sums were due for their pay, and who had fought hard in this campaign : they were much discontented with the king, and it was with some difficulty they were restrained. The constable and marshals of France appeased them, by promising

missing that their whole pay should be completely paid them at Paris; and, with the lord Louis de Sancerre and the lord de Blainville, pledged themselves for the performance.

Upon this the king departed, following the road to Peronne. The earl of Flanders took his leave of the king, and returned to Lille, where he resided. The king continued his route through Peronne, Noyon, Compiègne, to Senlis, where he stopped. The army took up their quarters in the villages between Senlis and Meaux in Brie, and upon the river Marne and round St. Denis so that the whole country was filled with men at arms. The king having left Senlis for Paris, ordered his officers to make ready the Louvre, where he intended to dismount. His three uncles did the same, sending their servants to prepare their hôtels, as did other lords. This they were advised to, by way of precaution; for the king and his lords had been counselled not to enter Paris suddenly, as the Parisians were not to be depended on, but to observe what countenance they would shew, and what preparations they had made against the king's return. The king's officers, and the servants of the other lords, were ordered, if any questions were asked about the king, and if he were coming, to reply, 'Yes, truly: he will be here instantly.'

The Parisians, on learning this, resolved to arm themselves, and shew the king, on his entrance into Paris, the force that was in the city armed from head to foot, ready for him, if he pleased,

to

to dispose of. It would have been better for them to have remained quiet in their houses, for this display cost them dearly. They said they had done it with good intentions, but it was taken in an opposite sense.

The king lodged at Louvres\*, and from thence went to Bourget†: it was immediately reported in Paris, that the king would be instantly there: upon which, upwards of twenty thousand Parisians armed themselves and took the field, and drew up in a handsome battalion between St. Ladre and Paris, on the side of Montmartre. Their cross-bowmen had large shields and mallets, and all were prepared as for instant combat. The king was still at Bourget, with his lords, when this news was brought them, and an account of the state of Paris. ‘See,’ said the lords, ‘the pride and presumption of this mob! what are they now making this display for? if they had thus come to serve the king when he set out for Flanders, they would have done well; but their heads were only stuffed with prayers to God, that none of us might return.’ To these words some, who would have been glad to have gone further and attacked the Parisians, added,—‘if the king be well advised, he will not put himself into the hands of

---

\* Louvres,—a town in the Isle of France, five leagues from Senlis, six from Paris.

† Bourget,—a small town in the Isle of France, about a league from Paris.



such people, who meet him fully armed when they ought to have come in all humility, with a procession, ringing the bells of Paris, and returning thanks to God for the grand victory he has been pleased to give us in Flanders.'

The lords were somewhat puzzled how to act: at last, it was determined that the constable of France, the lord d'Albreth, the lord de Concy, Sir Guy de la Trimouille and Sir John de Vienne should go to speak with them, and demand the reason why they had come out of Paris in such a body, armed from head to foot, to meet their king; for that such a proceeding had never before been known in France. These lords were prepared to answer, whatever might be their reply to this question; for they were fully capable to manage a business, had it been of ten times the importance.

They set out from the king unarmed, and, to give a pretext to their mission, they took with them three or four heralds, whom they ordered to ride forward, saying; 'Go to those people and demand from them a passport for our coming to them and our return, as we are ordered to parley with them, and tell them the king's commands.' The heralds sticking spurs into their horses, soon came up to the Parisians. When the Parisians saw them coming, they never thought they were ordered to speak with them, but that they were going to Paris, like men who wished to get there before hand.

The heralds, who had their emblazoned ta-  
bards



bards on, asked, with a loud voice, 'Where are the chiefs? where are the chiefs? Who among you are captains? because it is to them our lords have sent us.' These words made some of the Parisians perceive they had acted wrong, and, bowing their heads, replied; 'There are no chiefs here: we are but one, and under the command of our lord the king. Speak, in the name of God, what you have to say.'

'My lords,' answered the heralds; 'our lords (naming them) have sent us hither; for they cannot conceive what are your intentions; and to require that they may peaceably and without peril come hither and speak with you, and return to the king with such an answer as you shall give them; for otherwise they are afraid to come.'

'By my troth,' replied those to whom this speech had been addressed, 'there was no need to say this to us, unless it came from their noble minds; but we think you are laughing at us.' 'We have told you nothing but the truth,' said the heralds. 'Well then,' replied the Parisians, 'go and tell them they may come hither in perfect safety; for they shall have no harm from us, who are ready to obey their commands.'

The heralds returned to their lords and related what you have just read. The four barons then advanced, attended by the heralds, to the Parisians, whom they found drawn up in very handsome battle-array. They were upwards of twenty thousand. As these lords rode by them, examining and praising, in their own minds, their  
handsome

handsome appearance; the Parisians bowed as they passed. When they were arrived in the centre, they stopped: and the constable, addressing them, said with a loud voice, 'You people of Paris, what can have induced you thus to quit your town in such array? It would seem that, thus drawn up, you were desirous of combating the king, your lord, you who are his subjects.'

'My lord,' replied those who heard him, 'under your favour we have no such intentions, nor ever had. We have come out in this manner, since you please to know it, to display to our lord the king, the force of the Parisians, for he is very young and has never seen it; and, if he should not be made acquainted with it, he can never know what service he may draw from us should there be occasion.'

'Well, gentlemen,' answered the constable, 'you speak fairly: but we tell you from the king, that at this time he does not wish to see it, and what you have done has been sufficient for him. Return therefore, instantly to Paris, each man to his own house, and lay aside your arms, if you wish the king should come thither.' 'My lord,' replied the Parisians, 'we will cheerfully obey your orders.'

The Parisians upon this marched back to Paris, and each went to his house to disarm himself. The four barons returned to the king, and reported to him and his council the words you have heard. It was then ordered that the king and his uncles, with the principal lords, should enter

Paris

Paris with some men at arms, but that the main body should remain near the city, to keep the Parisians in awe.

The lord de Coucy and the marshal de Sancerre were ordered to take the gates off the hinges from the principal gates of St. Denis and St. Marcel immediately on the king's entrance into Paris, so that the gates might be open day and night for the men at arms to enter the more easily, and master the Parisians should there be any necessity for it. They also commanded the chains which were thrown across the streets to be taken away, that the cavalry might pass through the streets without danger or opposition. These orders were punctually obeyed.

The king made his entrance into Paris and lodged at the Louvre, and his uncles with him: the other lords went to their own hôtels, at least those who possessed any. The gates were taken off the hinges, and the beams which had been laid under the tower of the gates, with the chains from the streets were carried to the palace.

The Parisians, seeing this, were in great alarm, and so fearful of being punished that none dared to venture out of doors, nor to open a window; they remained in this situation for three days: in great fright lest they should receive more harm than they had done. It cost them several large sums; for those whom they wished to mark, were sent for one at a time, to the council chamber, where they were fined; some six thousand, others three, others one; so that they exacted from the  
city

city of Paris, to the profit of the king, his uncles and ministers, the sum of four hundred thousand francs. They never asked any but the principal persons as to their means of payment, who thought themselves happy to escape with only a fine. They were ordered to carry their armour in bags, each man his own, to the castle of Beauté, which is now called the castle of Vincennes, where they were thrown into the great tower, with the mallets.

In this manner were the Parisians punished, as an example to the other towns of the kingdom of France. In addition, they were taxed with subsidies, aides, gabelles, fouages, with the twelfth and thirteenth penny, and many other vexations. The flat country was also completely ransacked.

---

## CHAP. XLIX.

SEVERAL OF THE PRINCIPAL CITIZENS OF PARIS  
ARE BEHEADED WITH JOHN DES MARETS, AND  
MANY OTHERS IN THE DIFFERENT TOWNS AND  
CITIES IN FRANCE.

**T**HE king and his council arrested and threw into prison whatever persons they pleased. Many were drowned ; but, in order to calm the fears of the others, proclamation was made in the king's name in all the streets and squares of Paris, that no one, under pain of death, should hurt the inhabitants, nor pillage their houses.

This

This proclamation greatly appeased the Parisians. There were, however, carried to execution several of the inhabitants who had been condemned to death for having stirred up the people: but it was with great astonishment John des Marêts\* was seen among the number; he was considered as a wise and upright man; and some say he was condemned unjustly, for he was always known to have acted with the utmost prudence, and was above all one of the greatest and wisest members of the courts of law. He had served king Philip, king John and king Charles, with so much credit that no fault was found in him: nevertheless, he was condemned to be beheaded, with twelve others in his company.

As they were conducting him to his execution, seated in a cart high above the others, he called out, 'Where are those who have condemned me? Let them come forth, and justify, if they can, the cause and reason why and wherefore they have judged me guilty of death.' He then harangued the people, and those who were to suffer with him, which made all pity him, but they dared not speak out.

He was carried to the market-place in front of the town-house, where all who accompanied him were beheaded before his eyes: in the number

---

\* John des Marêts was an upright man, a distinguished magistrate and avocat general. He suffered from the hatred of the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, which was most inveterate towards him.



was Nicholas Flamand, a draper, for whose life forty thousand francs had been offered in vain. When the executioner came to behead John des Marêts, he said to him, ' Master John, beg for mercy of the king, that he may pardon you your crimes.' Upon which he turned, and said, ' I have served his great grandfather king Philip, king John, and king Charles his father, faithfully and loyally; and never did these three kings find fault with me, nor would this king have done so, if he had arrived at the wisdom and age of manhood. I firmly believe, that in my condemnation, he is not any ways culpable. I have not, therefore, any cause to beg his mercy; but from God alone shall I beg it, and that he would forgive all my sins.'

Upon this he took leave of all the people, who, for the greater part, were in tears; and thus died Master John des Marêts.

In like manner were several executed in the city of Rouen, and many fined, in order to intimidate the people. At Rheims, Châlons, Troyes, Sens and Orleans, similar scenes passed. The towns were heavily fined because they had been disobedient at the commencement of this reign. Immenfe sums were thus raised throughout the kingdom, and all went to the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, for the king was under their management. However, to say the truth, the constable and marshals had great part of it to pay the men at arms who had served in the expedition to Flanders. The lords and great barons of France, such as the count de Blois, the count de la Marche,

the

the count d'Eu, the count de St. Pol, the count de Harcourt, the count dauphin of Auvergne, the lord de Coucy and others, had granted to them assignments on the royal domain, to raise as much as the king owed them for their services in Flanders, and to pay their men. I know not how these lords were paid their assignments, for very shortly new taxes were imposed on these lands by orders from the king. Most commonly the king's tax was insisted on being paid first, and the lords were obliged to wait for their arrears.

---

## CHAP. L.

THE GHENT MEN RENEW THE WAR.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS BECOMES AN OBJECT OF HATRED TO THE ENGLISH.

**Y**OU know that when the king of France departed from Courtray, the town of Ghent was still in a state of war. The governors of it at this time were Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuijtre and Francis Atremen, who reinforced their army with soldiers who came from different countries, and were not in the least dismayed with their situation, but as fresh and vigorous as ever. These captains heard that there was a garrison of Bretons and Burgundians in the town of Ardembourg, and therefore determined to pay them a visit. Accordingly

Francis

Francis Atremen marched from Ghent with three thousand men, and arrived at Ardenbourg, where there was a severe skirmish. In fact, the Ghent men won the town; but it cost them a number of men, as there were full two hundred of their foldiers killed. The town was stormed, pillaged, and the greater part of it burnt. They then marched back to Ghent with their booty, where they were received with great joy. Shortly after this they advanced to Dendremonde, Aloft, and as far as Oudenarde, plundering the whole country.

The earl of Flanders, who resided at Lille, heard how the Ghent men were ravaging the country, and marching to different parts to plunder it. He was much enraged thereat, not supposing they would have had either the courage or power so to do, since they had lost Philip von Artaveld. Those present answered, 'My lord, you have always heard how very artful the men of Ghent are: they have shewn it to you, and will now do so the more since their ambassadors are returned from England, especially Francis Atremen, who was the intimate friend of Philip: and as long as he lives, you will never be free from war. We also know for a truth that he has concluded a treaty between Ghent and the king of England; for he is secretly, in spite of appearances, attached to England, and receives daily from thence one franc as wages. John Suplemon, who lives at Bruges, and has resided there under you for twenty-four years, pays him monthly. To corroborate the truth of his connections with Eng-

land, Raffé de Voirie, Louis de Voz and John Sercolat, who are from Ghent, and the clerk who solicits the Bishoprick, have remained behind in England to complete the treaties. In the month of May, you will hear more of all this than we now have told you.'

The earl of Flanders pondered on what he had heard, and believed the fact was so. He turned his attention to John Saplemon and the English at Bruges, and ordered his serjeants to summon them to appear on a certain day before him. The serjeants ordered John Saplemon and several other rich Englishmen, who were quite unprepared for such a proceeding, to appear that day fortnight before the earl, in the castle of Lille.

The English were much astonished at the summons, and consulted together. They could not imagine for what cause the earl had thus summoned them. Having weighed every circumstance they began to have their suspicions, for they knew the earl was very hasty in his anger. They said among themselves; 'He who is not careful of his own person, is careful of nothing. I suspect the earl has had some intelligence concerning us; for with Francis Atremen, who has a pension from our king, there are two citizens of this town in England, who, having turned to his party, may perhaps have given information against us, and placed us in his ill graces.'

This idea struck them all, and made them afraid to wait the day of summons, and to appear at Lille. They set out from Bruges for <sup>Ant</sup>werp, where, by great exertions, they purchased



ed a vessel that was ready to sail, and having embarked, weighed anchor, and arrived at the quays of London. When the earl of Flanders heard of this, and saw that the English did not come according to his summons, he was much vexed. He found, from appearances, that what he had been told was the truth. He instantly sent his serjeants to Bruges, and caused to be seized whatever could be found belonging to those English who had fled, selling the articles collected; and John Sapleton of London and his companions were banished Flanders for one hundred years and a day. Those who had been arrested were thrown into the dungeon of the prison, which cost some of them their lives, whilst others recovered all they had lost.

There is a common and true saying, that envy never dies. This come to my remembrance, because the English are too envious of another's good fortune, and have always been so. You must know, that the king of England, his uncles, and the nobility, were much vexed at the good success and great honour which the king of France and his nobles had gained at the battle of Rosebecque. When the English knights conversed together on the subject, they said; 'Ha, by holy Mary! how proud will the French be now, for the heap of peasants they have slain. I wish to God, Philip von Artaveld had had two thousand of our lances and six thousand archers: not one Frenchman would have escaped death or imprisonment. By God, they shall not long keep this honour, for we have now a fine opportunity



of entering Flanders. That country has been conquered by the king of France, and we will conquer it for the king of England. The earl of Flanders shews at this moment how completely he is subject to France, and how much he wishes, in every respect, to please her, by banishing from Bruges and Flanders our English merchants, who have resided there upwards of thirty years. The time has been when he would not have so done for any consideration, but at present he dares not act otherwise for fear of the French.'

This, and such like speeches, were common in England; and it was publicly said, that things should not remain as they were: now, one may fairly suppose, that envy was the original cause of it.

---

## CHAP. LI.

POPE URBAN SENDS BULLS INTO ENGLAND FOR  
THE DESTRUCTION OF THE CLEMENTISTS.—  
THE BISHOP OF NORWICH APPOINTED COM-  
MANDER IN CHIEF AGAINST THEM.

**A**BOUT this period he who signed himself pope Urban the sixth, came from Rome to Genoa by sea, where he was grandly received, and he fixed his seat there. You have heard how all England was obedient to him, both church and commonalty, and now more than ever.

Because

Because the king of France and that nation were Clementists, Urban, (whom the English and several other countries obeyed) during his residence at Genoa, sought how he could obtain succours from England to annoy the king of France; and I will tell you by what means. He was to send his bulls to the archbishops and bishops of the country, to proclaim that he absolved, and would absolve, from all crime or fault, every one who would assist in the destruction of the Clementists. He had heard that his adversary Clement had resorted to this means in France, and was daily doing so; and that the French called the Urbanists, as to matters of faith, dogs, which those retorted back on the Clementists, whom Urban was very desirous of condemning to the utmost of his power, and he knew he had no other means of hurting them but through the English. It was necessary, however, that he should have a considerable sum of ready money, if he wished to put his plans into execution; for it was well known that the nobles of England would not, for all the absolutions in the world, undertake any expeditions, unless such were preceded by offers of money. Men at arms cannot live on pardons, nor do they pay much attention to them except at the point of death. He therefore determined, that with the bulls he sent to England for the prelates to preach upon, he would order a full tenth to be raised by the church, and to be paid by them to the nobility, without affecting the king's treasury, nor oppressing the common people.

This

This, he imagined, would be agreeable to the knights and barons of England.

He instantly hastened the writing and engrossing his bulls, as well to the king as to his uncles and the prelates of England, with his pardons and absolutions from all crimes; he granted besides, to the king and his uncles, a full tenth to be by them raised and levied throughout the kingdom, on which he enlarged very much. And because all these sums were to come from the church, he would have a churchman command the expedition. The lord Henry Spenser, bishop of Norwich, was appointed, that the commonalty and churches of England might have greater faith in it.

In addition to this, because he knew that the king of Spain was contrary to his interest, and much allied with the king of France, he declared, that with the money that should be thus raised in England, the duke of Lancaster, who, in right of his wife, called himself king of Castille, should set out for that country to raise a similar army there: and, if the duke of Lancaster would undertake this expedition with a powerful force of men at arms, he would grant to the king of Portugal (who had just commenced a war against don John king of Castille) a full tenth on the whole kingdom of Portugal.

In this manner was Urban active in his own concerns. He sent upwards of thirty bulls to England, where they were received with much joy. The prelates preached up in their dioceses this expedition in the manner of a croisade; and

and the people of England, who are credulous enough, believed it too readily, so that none of either sex thought they should end the year happily, nor have any chance of entering paradise, if they did not give handsomely to the expedition as pure alms. At London, and in that diocese, there was collected a large Gascony tun full of money, and he who gave most, according to the pope's bull, gained the greatest number of pardons. All who should die at this time, and who had given their money, were absolved from every fault; and, by the tenor of the bull, happy were they who could now die, in order to obtain so noble an absolution. They collected, during the winter and ensuing Lent, throughout England, as well by alms as by the tenth from the church, for every thing was received, and they so cheerfully taxed themselves that the sum of twenty-five hundred thousand francs was amassed.

---

## CHAP. LII.

THE BISHOP OF NORWICH, COMMANDER OF THE ENGLISH IN THE CROISADE OF URBAN AGAINST THE CLEMENTISTS, DISEMBARKS AT CALAIS WITH HIS ARMY OF URBANISTS.

**W**HEN the king of England, his uncles and council were informed of the amount of  
the

the above sum, they were greatly rejoiced, and said they had money sufficient to carry on a war against the two kingdoms of France and Spain.

Thomas, bishop of London, and brother to the earl of Devonshire, was nominated to accompany the duke of Lancaster to Spain, in the name of the pope and prelates of England. They were to have two thousand lances and four thousand archers, and one half of the money which had been raised; but they were not to leave England so soon as the army under the command of the bishop of Norwich, because this last was to march to Calais and enter France. They were uncertain how far in that country they could advance, and whether the king of France would meet them in force to give them battle.

There was another circumstance adverse to the duke of Lancaster, who had great expectations from his intended expedition: the common people of England inclined in general to follow the bishop of Norwich in preference to him: for a considerable time he had not been popular with them: besides, France was much nearer than Spain. Some said privately, that the duke of Lancaster, more through avarice and a desire to partake of the large sums which had been collected from the church and from the alms of good men than through devotion, had planned this expedition; but that the bishop of Norwich represented the pope, and had been appointed by him to the command, for which reason the greater



greater part, of the people, as well as the king, had greater faith in him.

There were in the pay of the church, and under the command of this bishop of Norwich, several good knights of England and Gascony, such as the lord de Beaumont, sir Hugh Calverley, sir Thomas Trivet, sir William Helmon, sir John Ferrers, sir Hugh Spenser nephew of the bishop, being his brother's son, sir William Fermiton, sir Matthew Redman, governor of Berwick, the lord de Châteauneuf, and his brother sir John de Châteauneuf, Raymond Maffon, William de Pan, Gariot Vighier, John de Cachitan, with many others : in the whole, about five hundred lances and fifteen hundred other men ; but there were multitudes of priests, because it was an affair of the church and had been set on foot by the pope.

The men at arms were punctual in laying in their stores, and the king gave them a passage from Dover and Sandwich. Their purveyances were at those places about Easter ; and all who were desirous of going on this expedition, which was a sort of croifade, marched thither in small bodies.

Before the bishop and the captains embarked, but particularly sir Hugh Calverley, sir Thomas Trivet and sir William Helmon, they were summoned to attend the king's council, where they solemnly swore, in the presence of the king, to fulfil the object of the expedition, and that they would never make war on, or harrafs any country or men who acknowledged pope Urban,  
but

but only those who were under the obedience of Clement.

After they had taken this oath, the king, by advice of his council, addressed them, saying, — ‘ Bishop, and you, Thomas and William, when you shall have arrived at Calais, you will remain there for a month or thereabouts, in which time I will send you a good marshal and valiant man, sir William Beauchamp; for I have dispatched messengers to him on the borders of Scotland, where he at present is holding conferences on our part with the Scots, for the truce between us and Scotland will expire on St. John’s day. On his return, you shall have him without fail in your company; therefore wait for him, for he will be of great use to you by his good sense and advice.’

The Bishop of Norwich and the above-named knights assented to this proposal, and quitted the king: they went to Dover, where they embarked, and arrived at Calais the 23d of April, 1383. Sir John Delvernes was at that time governor of Calais, who received the bishop and his companions with much pleasure. They disembarked, a few at a time, with their horses and armour; and those who had the opportunity of doing so, lodged themselves in the town, the rest abided in huts which they erected in the neighbourhood, and continued thus until the 4th day of May, expecting their marshal, sir William Beauchamp, who, however, did not arrive.

The bishop of Norwich, young and eager,  
and

and wilhing to bear arms, having never done so but in Lombardy with his brother, finding himself at Calais, and at the head of so fine a body of men at arms, said to his companions, 'For what purpose, my good firs, are we thus waiting here so long? Sir William Beauchamp will never arrive, and the king and his uncles have totally forgotten us. Let us perform some deeds of arms, since we have been ordered so to do, and loyally employ the money of the church, since we are living upon it, and make conquests on our enemies.'

'It is well spoken,' replied those who heard him. 'Give notice to our men, that in three days we shall make an excursion, and let us determine to what part we shall march. We cannot issue out of the gates of Calais without entering an enemy's country: for France surrounds us on all sides, as well towards Flanders as towards Boulogne and St. Omer: Flanders is now a conquered country, by the power of the king of France. Considering all things, we cannot do a more honourable exploit than to reconquer it; for the earl of Flanders has done great injustice to our countrymen, whom, without any apparent reason, he has banished from Bruges and Flanders. Two years ago, he would not willingly have done so; but at this moment he must obey the orders and good pleasure of the king of France.' 'On which account,' said the bishop of Norwich, 'if I may be believed, the first expedition we undertake should be to Flanders.'

'You

‘ You shall be believed heartily,’ replied sir Thomas Trivet and sir William Helmon: ‘ give orders for this, and let us march thither in three days, for it will be on enemy’s ground.’

This was adopted by all in the council, and they gave notice of it to the rest of the army.

---

### CHAP. LIII.

THE BISHOP OF NORWICH, COMMANDER OF THE URBANISTS, ENTERS FLANDERS CONTRARY TO THE OPINION OF SIR HUGH CALVERLEY.—THE EARL OF FLANDERS SENDS AMBASSADORS TO THE BISHOP, WHO RETURNS A HARSH ANSWER.

SIR Hugh Calverley was not present at this council, having gone to see a cousin called sir John Droicton\*, who was governor of Guines, and had remained there all that day, intending to return on the following, which he did. The bishop sent for him to the castle, where he was lodged, as were the others, because sir Hugh had been longer accustomed to arms and had seen more than they had done. The knights had told the bishop that they wished to have sir Hugh’s opinion before they undertook any thing. The bishop related to sir Hugh, in their presence, the conversation which had passed, and demanded his advice on it. Sir Hugh thus replied to the

---

\* Droicton. Q. Drayton.



bishop ; ‘ Sir, you know on what terms we have left England : our expedition has nothing to do with what concerns the wars of kings, but is solely pointed against the Clementists. We are the soldiers of pope Urban, who has given us absolution from all faults if we destroy the Clementists. Should we march into Flanders, notwithstanding that country may now appertain to the king of France and duke of Burgundy, we shall forfeit our engagement ; for I understand, that the earl of Flanders and all the Flemings are as good Urbanists as ourselves ; besides, we have not a sufficient army to enter Flanders, for they are prepared and accustomed to war, having had nothing else to do for these last four years. They are a numerous people, and it will be difficult to march through so strong a country. But if you be determined on an expedition, let us march into France, there we shall find our enemies. The king, our lord, is now at open war with them, and the French are all Clementists, holding a contrary faith to us and to our pope. We ought to wait for our marshal sir William Beauchamp, who cannot fail to arrive soon with large reinforcements ; and the last word the king said to us was, that he would send him. I therefore advise, since you are resolved on an expedition, that we march towards Aire or Montrieul : none will venture, as yet, to oppose us, and we shall add to our numbers by the Flemings who, having lost their all, will come and join us in the hopes of gain. They have still ranking in their minds the misfortunes the  
French



French brought on them by the slaughter of their fathers, sons and friends in their wars.'

Scarcely had sir Hugh done speaking, when the bishop, in a rage, hot and impetuous as he was, replied; 'Yes, yes, sir Hugh: you have learnt so long to fight in France, that you know not how to fight elsewhere. Now, can we any where make an excursion with more advantage to ourselves than towards the sea, by Bourbourg, Dunkirk, Nieuport, and thence to the dependencies of Cassel, Bergues, Ypres and Poperingue. In the country I have named, according to the informations I have received from citizens of Ghent who are with us, they have never been harrassed by the war; we will therefore go thither to refresh ourselves, and wait for the arrival of sir William Beauchamp, if he intend coming, but as yet we have not had any intelligence of him.'

Sir Hugh Calverley, seeing himself thus rebuffed by the bishop, who was of high birth and his commander, notwithstanding he was a valiant knight, made no reply, and the rather because he had not any support from sir Thomas Trivet, nor from sir William Helmon: he therefore left the place, saying; 'By God, sir, if you make an excursion, sir Hugh Calverley will accompany you, and you shall take neither road nor march but he will be of the party.'

'I willingly believe,' said the bishop, 'that you have a great desire for an excursion: therefore make yourself ready, for we shall march in the morning.' In this resolution they agreed, and

and then separated. Orders were sent to all the quarters in and round Calais, that every one might be prepared for the expedition in the morning. When morning came, the trumpet sounded, and all marched off, taking the road towards Gravelines. They were, according to a muster made, three thousand armed heads. They continued their march until they came to the port of Gravelines; but it was at the time of ebb, they therefore passed by the port, and attacked and pillaged a monastery which the townsmen had fortified. The town could not hold out long, for it was only inclosed by palisades, and the inhabitants were seamen. If there had been any gentlemen in the town it would have held out longer than it did. Neither had the country any notice of this war, nor did they any way suspect the English of thus attacking them. The English therefore conquered the town of Gravelines by storm; and, having ended it, advanced towards the monastery, whither these good people had retreated, carrying with them their wives, children and fortunes, which they placed therein, depending on the strength of the walls. They had made deep ditches all round this strong place, so that the English could not immediately win it, but remained two days in the town before they took it. In the end, they conquered, and slew those who defended it, doing with the remainder according to their pleasure.

Thus were they lords and masters of Gravelines, where the whole army was quartered, and  
found

found plenty of provision. The country began to take alarm on hearing the English were in possession of Gravelines; and those of the low countries sheltered themselves in the fortresses, sending their wives and children to Bergues, Bourbourg and St. Omer.

The earl of Flanders heard at Lille, where he resided, that the English had made war on his country, and had taken Gravelines. He began to have suspicions of them, as well as of Bruges and its dependencies. Summoning his council, he said to them; 'I am very much astonished that the English should overrun my country, and take my towns without giving me any notice of it; and that, without sending me any defiance, they should have entered my territories.' 'Indeed, my lord,' some of them replied, 'you have cause to wonder; but one may suppose they consider Flanders as belonging to France, since the king had advanced so far into it that the country surrendered to him.' 'Well, what had we best do?' asked the earl. 'It will be right,' replied his council; 'that Sir John de Villain, and Sir John du Moulin, who are here, and have pensions from the king of England, should go in your name to England to speak with the king, and report to him a detail of this affair, and demand, in your name, for what purpose he thus makes war on you. I believe, that when he shall have heard your ambassadors, he will be angered at those who have thus harraßed your country, and recal them thence with much blame.'

'This is very well,' said the earl, 'but during the

the time our knights are going to England, those at Gravelines (and who will stop them?) may do great damage to the inhabitants of the Franco-nate.' The earl was thus answered; 'It is necessary some parley should be held with them, as well to obtain passports for Calais and England as to know what it is they want; and sir John Villain and sir John du Moulin are such discreet persons, that they will manage to restore peace to the country.' 'I consent to this,' replied the earl.

The two knights received their instructions from the earl and his council, in regard to the parley with the bishop of Norwich as well as respecting their mission and what they were to say to the king of England and his uncles. Whilst these knights were preparing to set out for Gravelines to the bishop of Norwich, all the country rose in the environs of Bourbourg, Bergues, Cassel, Poperingue, Furnes, Nieuport and other towns, and advancing to Dunkirk, entered that town, declaring that they would in a short time march out to guard the frontiers and fight the English. These Flemings had for leader a knight called sir John Sporequin, who was governor or regent of the territories of madame de Bar, which are situated on this frontier and extend to the gates of Ypres.

Sir John Sporequin was ignorant of the earl's intentions of sending to England: the haze de Flandres had come to him with thirty lances, and said that the earl was at Lille; but that he knew nothing more; and that he was about to marry his sister there with the lord Delbaurin.

These two knights took great pains to stir up the country and to collect all men of courage: they amounted at last to twelve thousand men, armed with pikes, staves, coats of mail, jackets, iron caps and helmets, and all of them were, for the greater part, as I was informed, vassals of madame de Bar residing between Gravelines and Dunkirk.

Three leagues off, and near the road, is Mardyke, a large village quite open on the sea-shore, whither the English advanced; and at times there were skirmishes.

Sir John Villain and sir John du Moulin arrived at Gravelines with a passport, for which they had waited at Bourbourg, where one of their heralds brought it. On their arrival at Gravelines, and soon after they had dismounted, they waited on the bishop of Norwich, who outwardly gave them a handsome reception and good entertainment. He had that day at dinner all the barons of his army; for he well knew that the knights of the earl of Flanders were coming, and therefore wished they might meet with them all together.

The knights opened their business, and said to the bishop,—‘ Sir, we are sent hither by my lord of Flanders.’ ‘ What lord?’ said the bishop.

‘ The earl of Flanders, sir: Flanders has no other lord.’

‘ By my God,’ replied the bishop, ‘ we consider it as belonging to the king of France or to the duke of Burgundy, our enemies, for by force of arms have they just conquered it.’

‘ Under respect to your grace,’ answered the knights,



knights, ' the territory was loyally remitted at Tournay into the hands and government of my lord the earl of Flanders, who has sent us hither to entreat of you to grant us, who are attached by faith and pension to the king of England your lord, passports to go to England, to the king, to know his reasons for making war on my lord the earl of Flanders and his country without sending him any defiance.'

The bishop replied, he would consider of it, and they should have his answer to-morrow morning. They could not obtain more at this moment, and retired to their houses, leaving the English in council, who resolved as I shall tell you.

Having fully weighed every circumstance, and the enterprize they had undertaken, they resolved not to grant passports to the two knights to go to England, for the journey was long, and, while they were going and returning, the whole country would be secured and greatly strengthened; for the earl, who was a subtle character, might inform the king of France and duke of Burgundy of his situation, by whose means so large a force might in a few days come upon them, that they would be unable to resist it. Having formed this resolution as to the answer they would give in the morning to the knights from Flanders, sir Hugh Calverley was called upon for his opinion, who said to the bishop; ' Sir, you are our commander: you will tell them that we are on the territories of the duchess of Bar, who is a Clementist; that you make war for Urban and no one else;

and that if the people of this country, with the churches and monasteries, will be good Urbanists, and march with you through the country, your men shall peaceably pass, paying for whatever they may want: but in respect to granting them passports to go to England, you will do no such thing; for our war does not regard either the king of France, or the king of England, but solely pope Urban, whose soldiers we are. It seems to me that such an answer ought to satisfy them.'

All present assented to it, and particularly the bishop, who had no other care, whatever might be said or done, but to fight and carry on the war. Thus was this business arranged for the night. On the morrow after mass, the two knights, desirous of having their answer, went to the lodgings of the bishop, and waited until he came out to hear mass, when they placed themselves before him. Outwardly he seemed glad to see them, and conversed with them on different topics to delay the time until his knights should come. On their arrival, the bishop said, 'My fair gentlemen, you are come for an answer, and you shall have one. With regard to the request you made to us from the earl of Flanders, I inform you, you may return when you please to the earl; but as to Calais or England, you will go at your perils, for I will not give you any passport. I am not king of England, nor commissioned to do so. I am the soldier of pope Urban, and all those who are with me are so likewise, having taken his money to serve

serve him. We are at this moment on the territories of the dukes of Bar, who is a Clementist. If the people of this country hold that opinion, we make war on them. If they will follow us, they shall have their share of the absolutions; for Urban, who is our pope, and for whom we march, absolves from all crimes those who shall aid in the destruction of the Clementists.

When the two knights heard this speech, sir John Villain said; 'Sir, with respect to what concerns the pope, I believe you have never heard but that my lord of Flanders is a good Urbanist, you have therefore been badly advised if you make war on him or on his country: and I do not believe that the king of England has given you such extensive orders; for if such had been his intentions, he is so noble and considerate, he would first have sent him a defiance.'

This answer enraged the bishop, who said; 'Go and tell your earl, he shall not have any other answer. And if he wishes to send you or any others to England, to learn more particularly the king's intentions, let him look to it; for those he sends must take another road than this, and they shall not cross at Calais.'

When the knights found they could not have any other answer, they took their leave and departed. They returned to their lodgings to dinner; and then, mounting their horses, went that day to St. Omer.

## CHAP. LIV.

THE BISHOP OF NORWICH MARCHES TOWARDS  
DUNKIRK.—HE DEFEATS TWELVE THOUSAND  
FLEMINGS AND TAKES THE TOWN.

THE same day that the knights of Flanders had departed, news was brought to the bishop and the English, that there were at Dunkirk and in its neighbourhood, upwards of twelve thousand men armed, and that the bastard of Flanders commanded them, but that there were other knights and squires who also advised them. That they had skirmished with their men at Mar-dyke, and had repulsed and killed one hundred.

The bishop said; 'Now observe the conduct of the earl of Flanders: he affects to do nothing, and yet he is at the bottom of all; he wants to negotiate sword in hand. I am resolved to march to-morrow towards Dunkirk, and see what sort of men these are.'

This proposal met universal approbation, and notice was sent of it through Gravelines. This day two knights joined the army, one from Calais, the other from Guines, with about thirty lances and sixty archers. These knights were called sir Nicholas Cliton\* and sir John Dracton†, governor of Guines.

---

\* Cliton. Q. if not Clinton. † Dracton. Q. if not Drayton.



On the ensuing morning, every one was ready for the march. They took the field, amounting in number to more than six hundred lances and fifteen hundred archers. They advanced towards Mardyke and Dunkirk; and the bishop of Norwich had the arms of the church borne before him, the banner of St. Peter, gules with two keys en fautoir, as being gonfalonnier of pope Urban. His pennon had his own arms, which were argent quartered with azure, with a fret or, on a field azure, and a baton gules on a field argent; and, because he was a younger brother of the Despensers, his arms were charged with a bordure gules. Sir Hugh Despenser, his nephew, was there with his pennon, and the lord de Beaumont, sir Thomas Trivet, sir William Helmon and sir Hugh Calverley, had both banner and pennon. Sir William Drayton, sir John Drayton, his brother, sir Matthew d'Adremon, sir John Ferrers, sir William Frenenton\*, and sir John de Neufchastel, Gascon, had only pennons.

These men at arms came to Mardyke, where they refreshed themselves, and, having drank a cup, continued their march towards Dunkirk. The Flemings who were in the town heard that the English were marching in order of battle to combat them. Upon this, they resolved to take the field, and draw up in battle-array to defend themselves if there should be any occasion, for it would not be for their advantage to shut them-

---

\* Frenenton. Q. Farrington, or Frampton.



elves up in the town. They instantly executed this resolution, and all who were in Dunkirk armed and marched into the fields, where they drew up in good array on a hill, and mustered upwards of twelve thousand men.

The English were now advanced near to Dunkirk, when, on looking towards the rising grounds on the right, in the direction of Bourbourg, and near the sea-shore, they saw the Flemings formed in a large and well-arranged battalion. On this they halted, for they thought, from the manner in which the Flemings had drawn themselves up, that they had an intention of fighting. The principal captains assembled to consider how they should now act, and many words passed, for some, and especially the bishop, wished to march instantly to the combat; but others, such as the lord de Beaumont and sir Hugh Calverley were of a contrary opinion, and assigned as their reason, that the Flemings had never done them any wrong; and that, in truth, they had never sent any declaration of war to the earl of Flanders, though they had entered his country. 'We do not make war in a gallant manner, but like a mob, that whoever can, may pillage. The whole country where we are is Urbanist, and follows the same opinion as ourselves: now, consider what just cause have we for attacking them.' The bishop answered; 'How do we know whether they are Urbanists or not?' 'In God's name,' said sir Hugh Calverley, 'let us send a herald to them to know why they are thus drawn up in battle-array, and what they want; and let them

them be asked which pope they obey. If they answer pope Urban, you will require of them, by virtue of the bull we have with us, that they accompany us to St. Omer, Aire, Arras, or whithersoever we may wish to lead them. When they shall have had these questions put to them, we shall know their intentions, and may then call a council.'

This proposal was adopted, and a herald called, whose name was Montfort, and attached to the duke of Brittany. He was ordered by these lords to ride to the Flemings, and told what he was to say, and how to act when among them. He obeyed their commands, and, clothed in his proper coat of arms, without suspecting any accident, made for the Flemings, who were drawn up in handsome order of battle. He wished to address himself to some knights; but he could not, for as soon as the Flemings saw him, without ever asking what was his business, or making any inquiries, they surrounded him and slew him like ignorant people, nor could those gentlemen who were there save him. The English, on seeing this action, for they kept their eyes on them, were mad: as were also the citizens of Ghent who accompanied them, and were eager to urge them on, hoping that by these means new troubles would fall on Flanders.

The English said,—'This mob has murdered our herald: they shall dearly pay for it, or we will all die on the spot.' The archers were ordered to advance on the Flemings. A citizen of Bruges or Ghent was made a knight, and shortly the battle began

began briskly; for, to say the truth, the Flemings defended themselves very well, but the archers wounded or beat down many, when the men at arms broke through them, and with their pointed spears killed multitudes on their first charge. In short, the English won the day, and the Flemings were defeated. They thought to keep together in a body and enter Dunkirk; but the English followed them closely and kept up the engagement so warmly that they entered the town with them. Numbers were slain in the streets or on the shore, though they there gained some advantage, for the English lost four hundred at least.

As the English pursued, the Flemings retired: many detached parties fought, in which several knights and squires from Flanders were slain; scarcely any escaped death or captivity. Thus did this affair end: there were full nine thousand Flemings killed at this battle of Dunkirk.

The day this battle had taken place, sir John Villain and sir John du Moulin had returned to the earl of Flanders at Lille, and had repeated to the earl all they had seen and heard from the English. The earl was very melancholy on the subject, not knowing how to act: he was still more so, and with greater reason, when he heard the news of the slaughter and defeat of his men at Dunkirk.

He bore it with tolerable patience, and comforted himself as well as he could, by saying,—  
 ‘ Well, if we have lost this time, at another, please God, we shall win.’ He instantly dispatched  
 a mes-

a messenger to the duke of Burgundy, who was with the king of France, with private letters, to give him information of this event, and for him to consider of it; for he concluded that since the English had thus entered Flanders and killed his subjects, they would not rest there, but would advance further into the country and do more mischief.

The duke of Burgundy, on receiving this intelligence, sent knights and squires to garrison St. Omer, Aire, St. Venant, Bailleul, Bergues, Cassel, and all the strong places on the frontiers of Flanders, and to guard the entrance of Artois.

We will return to the English, and say how they prospered.

## CHAP. LV.

THE ENGLISH, UNDER THE COMMAND OF THE BISHOP OF NORWICH, HAVING CONQUERED ALL THE COAST FROM GRAVELINES TO SLUYS, LAY SIEGE TO YPRES.

**A**FTER the defeat near Dunkirk and the conquest of that town, the English were swollen with pride, and thought all Flanders was their own. To say the truth, had they marched directly to Bruges, many who were well acquainted with the state of that town, say it would have surrendered to them: but they act-

ed

ed otherwise; for they had determined to march to Bourbourg, to take that town, and then to advance to Aire and Cassel, conquering the whole country so as to leave no enemy in their rear, and then to lay siege to Ypres. They imagined the town of Ypres would surrender on seeing that the country was conquered.

The English left Dunkirk, after having done their pleasure with it, and marched for Bourbourg: the inhabitants of which place, being much alarmed, no sooner saw them coming than they instantly surrendered, on having their lives and fortunes spared. The English entered the place with great joy; for they said they would there establish a handsome garrison, to make war on St. Omer and the adjacent frontiers.

After this, they gained the castle of Dixmude: but it was three days before they took it by storm, and the garrison of two hundred men were slain. The English repaired it, and declared they would keep it to the utmost of their power, garrisoning it again with fresh men at arms. They continued their march to Cassel, which they took, where they made a great booty, and peopled it again with their own men.

They still continued their march, saying, that they would have a look at Aire; but many, well acquainted with its situation, knew it was not easy to be taken, and would cost too much: however, the bishop of Norwich said, he would have a near view of it.

At this time, the governor of Aire was a gallant knight from Picardy, called sir Robert de Bethune,



Bethune, viscount de Meaux: there were also with him sir John de Roye, the lord de Clary, sir John de Bethune his brother, the lord de Montigny, sir Perducas de Pont Saint, sir John de Chaugny and sir Florens his son, with several more; so that there were about six score lances of good men at arms, knights and squires.

When the bishop of Norwich, sir Hugh Calverley, sir Henry de Beaumont, sir Thomas Trivet, sir William Helmon, sir Matthew Redman and the rest were advanced to a place near Aire, called the New Ditch, they formed themselves in battle-array, and thus marched on in close order with banners and pennons fluttering in the wind; for they knew not what intentions the viscount and his companions might have.

The viscount with his knights and squires were handsomely drawn up on the causeway before the barriers of Aire, and plainly saw the English march beside them, on the road to St. Venant; but, as they were not in numbers sufficient to bar that passage, they remained quiet at their post to defend themselves if attacked. The English marched by, and took up their quarters two leagues from St. Venant: the governor of that place was a knight of Picardy called sir William de Melle, who had fortified the church of the town to serve as a place of retreat should it be necessary: he found it so, for the town was only inclosed by small palisadoes and ditches. The attack did not last long before the English entered it, when the French retreated, some to the castle, others

others to the church. Those in the castle were not attacked; for it was marvellously strong, and could not be approached for the deep and wide ditches which surrounded it: but the church was instantly assaulted by the English on their entrance into the town, for they had heard that the men at arms had retreated thither.

Sir William de Melle was a good and gallant knight, and would have defended the church of St. Venant valiantly; but the English archers had surrounded it, and shot so rapidly and with such good aim that scarcely any dared shew themselves in its defence. Those who were on the battlements were provided with stones, pieces of wood and artillery, which they used with such success as to wound many; but the attack was continued with so great earnestness by the English that the church was taken by storm and Sir William in it, who had fought valiantly. The others did the same; and had they entertained any hopes of being supported, they would have held out longer, which was the cause that they were thus easily taken. Sir William de Melle was made a prisoner: he agreed for his ransom, and returned to France with the consent of his captor, to whom he had given his word according to the manner in which all French and English gentlemen behave to one another in similar cases; but not so the Germans, who, whenever they take a prisoner throw him into durance vile, loaded with irons, in order to gain a more considerable ransom.

The

The bishop of Norwich and his army, on their departure from St. Venant, quartered themselves in the forest of Niepe, which was not far distant, and near to Bailloul. They entered the castle-wick of Poperingue, and took all the inclosed towns, wherein they found much money and great booty, which they sent to Bergues or Bourbourg. When they had thus laid the whole country under their subjection, so that none came to oppose them, and when they were masters of the coast from Gravelines to Sluys, having possessed themselves of Dunkirk, Nieuport, Furnes and Blanquenbergue, they advanced to lay siege to Ypres. There the bishop, sir Hugh Calverley and the English halted, and then sent messengers to Ghent. I have good reason to suppose that Francis Atremen went to them, and was at all their battles and conquests, and had served as conductor of the English from town to town, and from village to village.

#### CHAP. LVI.

THE MEN OF GHENT ASSIST THE ENGLISH IN THEIR SIEGE OF YPRES.—THE LORD DE ST. LEGER GOING TO REINFORCE THE GARRISON OF COURTRAY, BY ORDERS OF THE KING OF FRANCE, IS DEFEATED BY A PARTY OF ENGLISH NEAR COMMINES.

**W**HEN Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuitre, and the captains in Ghent heard that the Eng-

lish demanded their assistance, and were lying before Ypres, they were much pleased, and prepared themselves to march thither as speedily as possible. They set out from Ghent on the Saturday morning after the octave of St. Peter and St. Paul, to the amount of near twenty thousand, with a very considerable train of carts, and in good array. They marched by Courtray, and came before Ypres.

The English were rejoiced at their coming, and made great cheer for them, saying they would take Ypres, and then conquer Bruges, Damme and Sluys, making no doubt that before September, they would have conquered all Flanders. Thus did they boast of their good fortune.

The governor of Ypres at that time was the lord de Saint Pi, a very prudent and vallant knight who had thrown himself into the place, where every thing was done according to his plans and orders. The men at arms who had accompanied this knight thither by order of the duke of Burgundy and the earl of Flanders, were sir John de Bougraigne, castellan of Ypres, sir Baldwin de Delbedene his son, the lord Disseg-hien, the lord de Stades, sir John Blanchart, sir John de Merfelede, sir Hamel, sir Nicholas Belle, lord de Harlequebecque, the lord de Rolleghehen, sir John Ahoutre, John de Saint Pi, nephew to the governor, François Belle, sir George Belle, and many more. They had great difficulty to withstand the English, who attacked them openly and covertly. They were likewise under alarm lest there should be some understanding between  
the



the townsmen and those from Ghent; and left the place should, by treason, fall into their hands.

A gallant knight of Hainault called sir John de Jumont, was at this time in Courtray as its governor, having accepted it at the earnest entreaties of the duke of Burgundy and earl of Flanders. At that time no knight of Flanders dared to undertake it, so dangerous did the defence of it appear; for when the king of France had marched away it was dismantled and burnt, on which account very few resided there; and it was so much destroyed, that they could scarcely find a place to put their horses in.

Sir John de Jumont undertook the grand enterprise of defending it. He speedily repaired it, and behaved so gallantly, through God's mercy and grace, that there was not any damage done it; on the contrary, much honour accrued to him.

The duke of Burgundy, who carefully attended to the affairs of Flanders, as they so nearly concerned him, sent from France sixty Breton lances to Courtray, to reinforce and encourage sir John de Jumont. These men at arms marched to Lille, under the command of the duke: from thence they set out on a Friday morning to Commines, where they arrived, under the command of the lord de St. Leger and Yvonnet de Cantemat. By break of day full two hundred English lances had come to the town of Commines, to collect forage from the flat countries, and carry it to the army before



Ypres. These Bretons had not any expectation of their coming, and fell into their hands. There was a sharp engagement at the foot of the bridge of Commines, where the Bretons defended themselves marvellously well, and, if they had been supported by as many again as themselves, they would have escaped without loss.

As it was they were constrained to fly, for they were too few to oppose such numbers. The greater part were slain, or taken as they were escaping towards Lille. The lord de St. Leger was desperately wounded, and left for dead on the field. Fortunate were those who escaped from this engagement : and the pursuit of the English after the Bretons lasted to within half a league of the town of Lille. The lord de St. Leger, although mortally wounded, was carried to that town with great difficulty, where he died five days afterwards. Five of his squires died also, and thus ended this adventure.

---

## CHAP. LVII.

THE BISHOP OF LIEGE, NOT BEING ABLE TO  
BRING ABOUT A PEACE BETWEEN THE BISHOP  
OF NORWICH AND THE EARL OF FLANDERS,  
RETURNS HOME.

THE siege of Ypres was continued with  
great activity on the part of the English  
and Flemings, who made many assaults which  
much

much frightened those in the town. The earl of Flanders was not very well assured but that Ypres must fall; for the English are very subtle, and they could receive great reinforcements from England, by way of Calais, without his knowledge, or opposition, having garrisons in all the towns on the road. They might, if they had chosen, have had reinforcements from England; but they did not think much was to be dreaded at the commencement, either from the earl or the power of France, for several great English barons were prepared and ready to cross the sea at Calais, to assist their countrymen from the environs of Dover, Sandwich, and Lewes, had they been so required: they amounted to a thousand lances, and two thousand archers in the parts above mentioned. Sir William Beauchamp and sir William Windfor, marshals of England, were appointed by the king and council to command these men at arms, by which the duke of Lancaster lost this opportunity of making his expedition to Portugal.

All England, as I have before said, were more inclined to serve in the army of the bishop of Norwich than in that of the duke of Lancaster.

The earl of Flanders was informed of all these events which were passing in England, as well as of what was going forward before Ypres. He therefore resolved to provide, as much as was in his power, a remedy for them; for he supposed the duke of Burgundy would excite the barons of France to exert themselves to

drive the English out of Flanders, and from the countries which they had so recently conquered. But as he knew that France was very extensive, that several barons bound to serve the king were at a great distance, and that many things might happen before they could arrive, he resolved to send to sir Arnoul de Sorge, bishop of Liege, who was a staunch Urbanist, to request he would come to Ypres and negotiate with the English to decamp and march elsewhere; for he had been much astonished at their proceedings, since it was well known to the world that both himself and country were good Urbanists.

The earl managed so well that the bishop of Liege came to Hainault, and from thence to Valenciennes, Douay and Lille, where he had a conference with the earl, who informed him of what he wished him to do. After this, the bishop left Liege and came to the camp before Ypres, where the English and Ghent men received him very politely, and attentively listened to all he had to say. I was told at the time, that the earl of Flanders, through the means of the bishop of Liege, offered to the bishop of Norwich and the English, if they would break up their siege, and carry their war against the countries of the Clementists, to send them five hundred lances to serve under their orders for three months, and at his own expence.

The bishop of Norwich replied, he would attentively consider and discuss this proposal.

Many

Many words passed; for the Ghent men advised him not to put any trust in what the earl had said, for there was no dependence on his promises, and told him that if he could he would deceive him. Having therefore maturely considered every thing, he gave notice to the bishop of Liege, that he might return when he pleased, for he would not pay any attention to his offers; and, as for the siege, he would never depart thence until he had reduced the town of Ypres to his obedience.

The bishop finding he could obtain nothing more, took his leave and returned to Lille, and gave the earl of Flanders the answer he had received. When the earl saw that he could not obtain any terms, he was more pensive than before; for he clearly perceived, that unless the force of France raised the siege, he should lose his good town of Ypres. He therefore wrote other letters, giving a detail of what answers he had received, and what was going forwards, which he sent by one of his own knights to his son and daughter of Burgundy, who resided at Compiègne. The bishop of Liege left the earl, and returned through Douay and Valenciennes to his own country.

## CHAP. LVIII.

THE KING OF FRANCE ISSUES A GRAND SUMMONS, WITH THE INTENTION OF RAISING THE SIEGE OF YPRES.—SOME OF THE EARL OF FLANDERS' MEN ARE DEFEATED BY THE ENGLISH BEFORE THE CHURCH OF EMENIN.

**T**HE duke of Burgundy, being convinced that things would end badly if the king of France with an army did not provide a remedy, exerted himself for a parliament to be holden at Compiègne of all the great barons and princes of the realm of France.

To this parliament all who were summoned came, and the duke of Brittany personally attended. It was there discussed, whether or not the king of France, with his uncles the dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon should march to Flanders with a greater force than he had commanded at Rosebecque, to raise the siege of Ypres, and offer combat to the English and Flemings, if they should think proper to wait for him.

It was resolved in the affirmative; and the king of France issued his summons throughout the kingdom for every man to be at Arras, or in that neighbourhood, by the 15th day of August, provided with all things suitable to his rank. The king wrote also to those at a distance, such as the counts d'Armagnac and Savoy, and to duke Frederick of Bavaria,

This



This duke was in upper Germany, and the son of one of the brothers of the reigning duke: he was very desirous of visiting the court of France and bearing arms for it, as he was fond of every sort of honour; and they had told him, which he believed as fact, that all honours in the world were to be had in France. Duke Frederick, being at such a distance, was the first sent for: he made his preparations on receiving the summons, and said he would come through Hainault, to visit his uncle and his cousins, the count de Blois and others.

During the time these warlike preparations were making, the siege of Ypres continued with great vigour. There were many attacks and skirmishes, in which several were killed or wounded: but the governor, sir John de Saint Pi, made so good a defence, that no essential damage was done.

During this siege, the earl of Flanders was informed that the church of Emenin was strong, and worth possessing; for, should the English come thither, they would easily take it, as it had no garrison, and they would from thence much harass the country. The earl resolved to take possession of it; and, sending for sir John du Moulin, he said to him,—‘Sir John, collect a body of men from this town, and with cross-bows go to Emenin, and gain the church, lest the English fortify it; for, if they win it, they will harass all the surrounding country.’ Sir John replied, he would willingly do so, and immediately made preparations for the excursion.

Non.

sion. On the morrow morning, he mounted his horse, accompanied by a young knight, a bastard son of the earl of Flanders, called Sir John Sans-terre, and about sixty lances, with the same number of archers. On their leaving Lille, they took the road to Emenin, but found only a few men at arms there, who, of their own free-will, were guarding the church.

This same day, about two hundred English and Gascon lances made also an excursion; and learning from the foragers that there were some men at arms and cross-bows in Emenin, they stuck spurs into their horses, and never halted until they arrived at the town, when, dismounting in the square before the church, they grasped their spears and shouted their cries.

Sir John du Moulin and the bastard of Flanders, seeing from this body of men that a combat was unavoidable, formed in battle-array in the square, and ordered their cross-bows to shoot: they at first wounded several of the English, who soon broke through them; but for a small body they made a good fight, though many were struck down, wounded and killed.

The English were so superior in numbers, that the Flemings were defeated, and the two knights made prisoners, who behaved gallantly in defending themselves. Of the remainder, many were taken; and very few returned to Lille, being mostly slain or captured. Thus ended this expedition to Emenin, which greatly vexed the earl of Flanders, but at that time he could

could not help it. The Gascons and English carried their prisoners with them, and made much of them; but it was not long before they ransomed themselves.

### CHAP. LIX.

THE ENGLISH AND GHENT MEN MAKE A SHARP ATTACK ON YPRES; BUT, LEARNING THAT THE KING OF FRANCE HAD MARCHED AN ARMY INTO ARTOIS, THEY INSTANTLY BREAK UP THE SIEGE.

**I**T always happens, that in war there are gains and losses: very extraordinary are the chances, as those know well who follow the profession. The siege of Ypres was pushed on with unwearied force; and it was fully the intention of the bishop of Norwich, the English and Peter du Bois, to conquer Ypres by storm or otherwise, as the vigour of their attacks shewed.

Among the many assaults, there was one much severer than the rest; for it lasted from morning until almost night. Many valiant actions were done by several on both sides, and the English and Flemings made vast exertions to conquer it. The besieged created that day four knights, John de St. Pi, nephew to the governor, François Belle, George Belle, and John Belle, who shewed themselves good knights in

this

this first display of their knighthood. An English squire, called Lewis Lin, was killed at this attack, which was very sharp; and numbers were wounded on each side, who too rashly exposed themselves.

The English archers, posted on the ditches of the town, shot so expertly and rapidly that scarcely any dared to appear on the battlements to defend the place. There were collected that day in Ypres two tons of artillery, especially arrows, which were shot into the town, so that none ventured to pass through those streets near the walls where the attack was made, for fear of being killed, if not well armed and shielded.

This attack lasted until night, when the English and Flemings, who had fought the whole day in two battalions, returned to the camp quite tired, as were likewise those in the town.

The English and Flemings, finding they could not take the town by storm, and having expended much of their artillery, resolved to have quantities of faggots made and collected, with which and earth they could fill up the ditches, so that they might advance to fight hand to hand with the garrison, undermine the walls, and, by throwing them down, win the place.

Workmen were instantly employed to procure and cut down as much wood as possible in the neighbourhood of Ypres, which was to be placed within side of the ditches and covered with



with earth : but this was not so soon done, nor could they accomplish their intentions ; for the king of France, having a great desire to raise this siege and fight with the English at all events, hastened his preparations, set out from Compiegne and marched to Arras.

The constable of France, with many barons who formed the van of the army, had already arrived, and were quartered in Artois. The duke of Brittany came with two thousand lances, as he was anxious to assist his cousin the earl of Flanders on this occasion. Indeed he was much bounden so to do, for he had found him, in former times, eager to befriend him in his distress. All the lords, both from far and near, were on their march and at hand. The count of Savoy and the count of Geneva, came with seven hundred honest Savoyards. Duke Frederick of Bavaria was hastening with a strong body of men at arms, and had arrived in Hainault. He resided at Quesnoy with his uncle duke Albert, his aunt, the duchess Margaret, and with his cousins.

The dukes of Lorraine and Bar arrived with a large body in Artois. Sir William de Namur, not having attended the former war, as the earl had excused him, came with two hundred good lances to serve the king of France and duke of Burgundy. He had passed through Hainault, and fixed his quarters in the country round Tournay. It was wonderful to see what bodies of men different lords brought to serve the king of France.

The



The count Guy de Blois lay ill at Landrecy\* during the whole time these warlike preparations were making, and neither himself nor his people knew if he would be able to bear the fatigues of this campaign with the king. He was carried in a litter to Beaumont in Hainault, and was somewhat better, for that air was more agreeable to him than that of Landrecy. Notwithstanding he was very unwell and feeble, he made ample preparations, as did his dependants in the country of Blois, such as the lord de Montigny, the lord de Vresin, sir Vilhennes de St. Martin, sir Waleran de Doustienne governor of Remorentin, and other knights and squires who came to serve under the young king of France.

News was brought to the bishop of Norwich, sir Hugh Calverley and the English besieging Ypres, that the king of France was hastening, by forced marches, with an army of upwards of twenty thousand men at arms, knights and squires, and sixty thousand other men. This intelligence was repeated from so many quarters, that at last it was thought to be true, for at first they would not believe it. They heard for certain that it was so, and that if they remained where they were, they would have to fight with them. They also learnt that the duke of Brittany was with the king of France, and coming against them, which astonished them much.

They called a council on this information, to

---

\* Landrecy,—a strong town in Hainault, diocese of Courtray.  
i consider

consider what line of conduct to pursue. Having weighed every circumstance, and not finding themselves in sufficient strength to wait for the whole force of the king, they judged it to be more prudent for Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuitre and the Ghent men to return to their town, and the English to retreat towards Bergues and Bourbourg, which they were to garrison: and if any force should come from England, or if king Richard or his uncles should cross the sea, they would send them advice of it.

This resolution was adopted, and they broke up their camp. The Ghent men set out on their return home, where they arrived. The English retired to Bergues and Bourbourg, and entered the forts which they had conquered.

The day that the English began their retreat, Thomas lord Percy, son to the earl of Northumberland, arrived. He came from Prussia, and hearing on his road that the kings of France and England were to engage in the plains of Flanders or Artois, each at the head of his army, the knight was so much rejoiced, and had so great a desire to be present at the battle, that the journey, which at a moderate rate of travelling would have taken forty days, he performed in fourteen, leaving his equipage and servants behind, and frequently changing horses. He afterwards learnt that his baggage had arrived in less than twenty days in the town of Ghent. Such good will and gallantry deserve much praise.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LX.

**DUKE FREDERICK OF BAVARIA ARRIVES AT THE ARMY OF THE KING OF FRANCE.—COUNT GUY DE BLOIS, NOTWITHSTANDING HIS ILL HEALTH, COMES TO ARRAS ATTENDED BY HIS MEN AT ARMS.**

**I**NTELLIGENCE was brought to the king of France, in the city of Arras, and to the lords with him, that the English and Ghent men had raised the siege and decamped from before Ypres. The king was eager to hurry matters and pursue them, so that they should not escape. He set out from Arras, and came to Mont St. Eloy, a very handsome abbey, where he remained four days waiting for the arrival of the duke of Berry. The army was continually increased by those who came to it from all parts, and it was known, through the constable, the marshals and sir Guiscard count dauphin, master of the cross-bows, that the king had with him upwards of one hundred thousand men.

The king departed from Mont St. Eloy, following the road to St. Omer, and came to Aire, of which place the viscount de Meaux was governor. He tarried there two days, the army still increasing. The constable with the van were advanced, and quartered in the town of Cassel. The king went to St. Omer, where he  
stopped

stopped for the arrival of his people, who were coming to him from every quarter.

When duke Frederick of Bavaria arrived at the army, the great barons of France, in order to do him honour, went out to meet him, as he had come from such a distant country to serve the king, who entertained him handsomely, and was thankful for his arrival. He caused him to be quartered as near to himself as possible during the whole expedition, as was but just.

In the army were full three hundred thousand horses: and it was wonderful where provisions could come from, or be found to supply such an army. At times, indeed, there was a scarcity; at others, they had abundance. The count Guy de Blois, who resided at Beaumont in Hainault, notwithstanding he was not yet recovered from the long illness he had been visited with during the summer, thought it would not be for his honour to remain idle, when so many great and powerful princes and lords were in the field; besides, inquiries had been made after him, as he was one of the leaders of the rear-ward. It was therefore better for him to join them, trusting to the will of God, than to remain behind under a supposition of dissembling.

This gallant lord began his journey; but as he was unable to ride, he ordered his litter, and took leave of the lady his wife, and of his son Lewis. Several of his council, on account of the great heat and closeness of the weather, looked on this journey as a wrong measure, whilst

whilst others who heard of it thought it a great proof of his courage. He was accompanied from Hainault by the lord de Sanzeft, the lord de Hanzelles, sir Gerard de Warrieres, sir Thomas de Distre, the lord de Douftrenent, John de Ghisnelle, who was created a knight on the road, and several more. He passed through Cambray, and came to Arras, and the longer he travelled the better was his health. His vassals from Blois, hearing of his journey, went to meet him. On his arrival at Arras, his people collected together, to the amount of more than four hundred lances, and always followed him. He had his provisions from Hainault, and in this respect was most abundantly supplied. Let us return to the king of France.

---

## CHAP. LXI.

THE VAN OF THE FRENCH ARMY TAKES CASSEL AND TRUGHEN.—THE ENGLISH ABANDON BERGUES, AND RETIRE TO BOURBOURG, WHEREIN THE KING OF FRANCE BESIEGES THEM.

THE king of France continued his march to St. Omer, where he halted and refreshed himself. The van, with the constable and marshals, advanced to Cassel, which was in the hands of the English.



English. The town was attacked, taken by storm, and all in it put to the sword. Those who could escape retreated to Bergues, where was sir Hugh Calverley with full three thousand English. The bishop of Norwich was not there, having retired to Gravelines, to be the sooner at Calais should there be occasion. The English had burnt and pillaged all the country near to Cassel.

The king of France, on his arrival at St. Omer, was lodged at an abbey out of the town, on the road to Bergues, called Ranombergues, where he remained. He came there on a Friday, and on the following day the constable, the marshals, with the lord de Coucy and a great number of good men at arms, took the field and came before the castle of Trughen, wherein were about three hundred men at arms, who had formed a garrison of this place the whole season.

They made a vigorous attack on the castle, and exerted themselves very much: indeed, they were forced to do so if they wished for conquest, as the English within defended themselves so valiantly that it was marvellous to think of their prowess. However, by continued attacks, and gallant deeds of arms, the castle was taken, and all within put to death, for the constable would not shew mercy to any one. In the lower court was found the most beautiful white horse that had been seen for years, which was presented to the constable, who instantly sent it to the king of France. The king willingly accepted the horse, and was so pleased with it that he rode it all Sunday.

The count de Blois, at this period, arrived at the army with his company. He was appointed to the rear division, as he had been last year at the battle of Rosebecque, in company with the count d'Eu, the count de Harcourt, the lord de Châtillon and the lord de la Fere. Men at arms were constantly coming in from all parts. It was a fine dry summer, otherwise it would have been bad for the horses near the sea-shore and impossible for them to have advanced into the country.

All the English except the bishop, who, quite thunderstruck, was gone to Gravelines, had retired into the town of Bergues, which was only inclosed by a palisade and ditches: he sorely repented having undertaken this expedition, for he saw that all he had done would now be turned with shame against him, and was still more sorry for the words he had uttered which had been repeated through France. He had boasted during the time he was besieging Ypres, that he would there wait for the king of France and his army, and offer them combat. He now felt how suddenly he had been forced to raise the siege and fly, for his army could not resist that of the king.

The English at Calais found great fault with him, saying he had very ill employed the pope's money. In truth, the duke of Lancaster, who had been prevented by this expedition of the bishop from carrying his own into execution, did not wish it would turn out otherwise. The principal barons of England were of the same sentiment; for when sir William Windsor, their marshal, sent



to tell them, whilst before Ypres, that if they wished for reinforcements, they should have very numerous ones, the bishop answered, as did sir Thomas Trivet and sir William Helmon\*, that they had strength enough, and more than they wished, to combat the king of France and the army he could bring against them. But sir Hugh Calverley, who had seen more service than any of the others, had always held a different language, and said during the siege of Ypres, when he heard of the offer from the barons in England,—‘Gentlemen, you seem to have great confidence in your strength: why should we refuse the assistance of our countrymen, when they offer to come to us and the country consents to it? A day may come, perhaps, when we shall repent of our refusal.’ But these words were not attended to, as they said they had men sufficient. Things therefore continued as they were, and in the end they lost more than they gained by it.

Sir Hugh Calverley, on his arrival at Bergues, quartered himself and his men in the different hôtels and houses of the town: they were in the whole, including archers, more than four thousand men. Sir Hugh said,—‘I am determined to keep this town; it is of good strength, and we are enough to defend it. I expect we shall have, in five or six days, reinforcements from England; for they will learn our situation, and also the force of our enemies.’ All replied, ‘God assist us!’

---

\* Sir W. Helmon. Elmham, according to Carte.

Upon this, he made very prudent regulations: on dividing his men under pennons and into companies, to mount the walls and guard the gates, he found he had numbers sufficient. He ordered all the ladies and women, children and lower classes of inhabitants to retire into a church, whence they were not to stir.

The king of France was at the abbey of Ranombergues, and learnt that the English had retreated to Bergues. A council was held on the occasion, when it was ordered that the van, with the constable and marshals, should advance beyond the town and encamp on one of its sides; and the king of France, with the dukes of Berry, Burgundy and Bourbon would follow with the main army; that the count de Blois and the count d'Eu, with the rear division, should lodge themselves on the other side of the town, and thus surround the English.

This plan was executed; and the king set out from Ranombergues, attended by his whole army. It was a beautiful sight to behold these banners, pennons and helmets glittering in the sun, and such numbers of men at arms that the eye could not compass them: they seemed like a moving forest, so upright did they hold their lances. Thus they marched in four divisions towards Bergues, to inclose the English in that town.

About eight o'clock in the morning, an English herald entered the town, who, by the courtesy of the lords of France, had passed through their army: he waited on sir Hugh Calverley in his hôtel,

hôtel, and spoke so loud that every one heard him. 'Herald, whence dost thou come?' 'My lord,' replied the herald, 'I come from the French army, where I have seen the finest men at arms, and in such vast numbers that there is not at this day another king who can shew the like.'

'And these fine men at arms which thou art speaking of,' said sir Hugh, 'what number are they?' 'By my faith, my lord, they are full twenty-six thousand men at arms: handsomer nor better armed were never seen.'

'Ha, ha!' replied sir Hugh, who was much provoked at the latter part of his speech, 'thou art a fine fellow to come and mock us with this pompous tale. I know well thou hast lied; for many a time have I seen the armies of France, but they never amounted to twenty-six thousand; no, not even to six thousand men at arms.'

As he said this, the watch of the town, who was at his post, sounded his trumpet, for the van of the enemy was about passing near the walls.

Sir Hugh then, addressing the knights and squires present, said; 'Come, come: let us go and see these twenty-six thousand men at arms march by, for our watch blows his horn.' They went on the walls of the place, and, leaning on them, observed the march of the van, which might have consisted of about fifteen hundred lances, with the constable, the marshals, the master of the cross-bows and the lord de Coucy. Next came the duke of Brittany, the earl of Flanders and the count de St. Pol, who had under



der their command about fifteen hundred lances more. Sir Hugh Calverley, who thought he had seen the whole army, said,—‘ Now see if I did not say truth: where are these twenty-six thousand men? Why, if they be three thousand men at arms, they are ten thousand. Let us go to our dinner, for I do not yet see such a force as should oblige us to surrender the town. This herald would frighten us well, if we were to believe him.’

The herald was much ashamed, but he said,—  
‘ My lord, you have as yet only seen the vanguard: the king and his uncles are behind with the main army, and there is besides a rear division, which consists of more than two thousand lances. You will see the whole in four hours, if you remain here.’

Sir Hugh paid not any attention to him, but returned to his house, saying he had seen every thing, and seated himself at table. He had scarcely done so, than the watch again blew his horn, and so loud as if he would burst it. Sir Hugh rose from table, saying he would see what was the cause of this, and mounted the battlements. At this moment, the king of France marched by, attended by his uncles, the duke Frederick, the duke of Lorraine, the count of Savoy, the dauphin of Auvergne, the count de la Marche and their troops: in this battalion were full sixteen thousand lances. Sir Hugh felt himself much disappointed, and said to the herald, who was by his side, ‘ I have been in the wrong to blame you: come,

come, come: let us mount our horses and save ourselves, for it will do us no good to remain here. I no longer know the state of France: I have never seen such numbers collected together by three-fourths as I now see and have seen in the van: besides, the rear division is still to come.' Upon this, sir Hugh Calverley left the walls and returned to his house. All the horses being ready saddled and loaded, they mounted, and, having ordered the gates to be opened which lead to Bourbourg, they set off without any noise, carrying with them all their pillage. Had the French suspected this, they could easily have stopped them; but they were ignorant of it for a long time, so that they were nearly arrived at Bourbourg before they heard of it.

Sir Hugh Calverley halted in the plain to wait for his rear and baggage. He was very melancholy, and said to sir Thomas Trivet and others who had come to meet him; 'By my faith, gentlemen, we have this time made a most shameful expedition: never was so pitiful or wretched a one made from England. You would have your wills, and placed your confidence in this bishop of Norwich, who wanted to fly before he had wings: now see the honourable end you have brought it to. There is Bourbourg! if you choose it, retire thither; but for my part I shall march to Gravelines and Calais, because I find we are not of sufficient strength to cope with the king of France.'

The English knights, conscious they had been to blame in several things, replied; 'God help us! we shall return to Bourbourg and wait the event,

event, such as God may please to ordain.' Sir Hugh on this left them; and they threw themselves into Bourbourg.

The king of France heard that the English had marched from Bergues and retreated to Bourbourg, leaving Bergues quite empty; the gates of which were opened to him, when the king entered with all who wished it. The first who did so found enough to pillage, for the English had not been able to carry away every thing. The women were saved and sent to St. Omer, but almost all the men were put to death and the town set on fire. The king marched on to lodge at a village, on account of the greatness of the fire. This happened on a Friday; and the lords encamped themselves separately in the fields as well as they could. It was fortunate for them that it was dry weather, for it could not be a finer season, had it been cold and rainy, they could not have foraged. Indeed it was wonderful where they found forage for such numbers of horses, as well as provision for so large an army. But on the day on which they came before Bourbourg great quantities of stores arrived, of which the lords of France were duly informed. They resolved to surround the town and attack it. The Bretons were, from avarice, eager to take it, on account of the great booty they expected to find there.

On the Saturday morning it was clear weather, and the army made itself ready to march to Bourbourg. The van-guard, the duke of Brittany, the earl

earl of Flanders, the count de St. Pol, the constable of France, with about three thousand lances, marched on the outside of the walls, and halted opposite to the king's division, which consisted of the finest men at arms that could be seen or imagined. They advanced to a large plain before Bourbourg, where the different lords drew up their men; and it was for a long time their intention to storm the place. Banners and pennons were flying in the wind, and each lord under his own banner. The lords of France made a splendid shew, and had not been sparing of any expence in exhibiting appearances suitable to their rank. The lord de Coucy and his state were particularly noticed, for he had led coursers richly caparisoned, and ornamented with housings with the ancient arms of Coucy mixed with those he now bore. He himself was mounted on a beautiful horse, on which he rode from side to side in a most graceful manner, to the delight of those who saw him: all praised him for the agreeable manner with which he addressed every one.

The other great lords kept up a state suitable to their dignity. More than four hundred knights were this day created. The heralds mustered the knights who were before Bourbourg with the king, and they amounted to from seven to nine thousand. In the army were upwards of twenty-five thousand men at arms and squires.

The English were at their posts in the town of Bourbourg, and, seeing this immense force of the king of France before them, expected an assault: they were pleased at the thought; but when they  
found

found themselves shut up in a town which was only defended by palisadoes, they were not so well satisfied: however, like men of courage, they had posted themselves in companies round the town. The lord Beaumont\* (who is an earl in England, and his name Henry) commanded one hundred men at arms and three hundred archers, to guard one part of the town: sir William Elmham, with as many men, guarded another part. Sir John de Châteauneuf, with the Gascons, had another quarter to defend as far as the tower, opposite to the quarters of the constable. The lord Ferrers, an Englishman, was with forty men at arms and as many archers at another part, so that the whole place was well guarded with men at arms and archers. Sir William Farrendon, sir Matthew Redeman, and sir Nicholas Tracton†, with two hundred men and as many archers, were posted in the square before the church. They had appointed a body of men to watch and extinguish any fires that might happen; for the English were much afraid of the town being burnt, as the houses were only covered with thatch.

In this situation were the English. I must now relate the gallant action which Francis Atremen performed this same Friday in the evening, when the king of France, after having taken Bergues, continued his march.

---

\* Lord Beaumont. Froissart mistakes: he was a baron, and his name was John: his son's name was Henry. See Dugdale.

† Q. If not Drayton, or Tresham.



## CHAP. LXII.

FRANCIS ATREMEN SURPRISES OUDENARDE IN  
THE NIGHT-TIME.

**F**RANCIS Atremen, Peter du Bois, Peter le Nuitre and the other captains, after their return to Ghent from the siege of Ypres, were daily and nightly imagining how they could annoy their enemies. Francis Atremen found out, that the governor of Oudenarde, sir Gilbert de Lieneghen and the men at arms, had left Oudenarde, by orders from the earl of Flanders, and were with the army of the king of France before Bergues and Bourbourg. He also learnt that the town was carelessly guarded, and that the ditches in the meadows on the road to Hamme were dry, as they had emptied them of water to get the fish, so that the walls of the town might be approached on foot, and might be entered with ladders. Such was the intelligence the spies of Francis Atrement had brought to Ghent, who, at their leisure, had examined the town; for the guards held the Ghent men very cheap, and, as it were, had forgotten, or were quite indifferent concerning them.

When Francis Atremen had heard all this from his spies, he went and related it to Peter du Bois, and said; ‘ Peter, such is the situation of Oudenarde: I am resolved to risk the chance of taking  
it

it with scaling ladders: there never can be so good an opportunity as the present, for neither the governor nor the men at arms are in it, but with the king of France near St. Omer, and they have not the least fear or suspicions of any one.'

Peter du Bois instantly assented to the proposal, and said; 'Francis, if you succeed in this expedition, no man will ever have behaved better, and every one will praise you for so gallant an action.' 'I do not know,' replied he, 'how it may turn out, but my courage does not fail me, and my heart tells me that this night I shall gain Oudenarde.'

Francis Atremen then chose four hundred men in whom he had the greatest confidence, and, towards night-fall, set out on his road to Oudenarde. It was in the month of September, when the nights are tolerably long, and such beautiful weather that it was a pleasure to be out in it. About midnight they arrived in the meads of Oudenarde, having ladders with them. As they were traversing the marshes, there was a poor woman gathering grafs for her cows, who, hiding herself, heard their conversation, and knew from it that they were Ghent men going to surprize the town, for she saw them carrying ladders. She was at first much frightened, but recovering courage, said to herself, that she would hasten to the town and inform the guard of what she had heard and seen. She made for the town by a short path she was acquainted with, and arrived at the ditches before the Ghent men, when she began to moan and complain, so that

that one of the night-guard going his rounds heard her, and asked who she was, she said she was a poor woman who had come to tell them that a body of Ghent men were close at hand; and that she had seen them carrying many ladders to surprise Oudenarde; but now she had given this information she must get away, for should they meet her she would be a dead woman.

The poor woman departed, and the watch remained perfectly astonished. He determined to keep quiet where he was, to see if this woman had told truth. The Ghent men, without horn or trumpet, were silently advancing to begin their enterprise: they made not any noise except by talking. Francis Atremen sent forward four of his men, ordering them to reconnoitre without making the least noise by coughing or otherwise, and report to him, should they observe any thing.

They obeyed their orders, and Francis Atremen remained hid in the marshes with his men, very near this poor woman, who heard and saw them distinctly; but they did not notice her. The four men advancing up to the ditches, neither saw nor heard any thing. It was very unlucky; for, if they had but seen a lighted candle, they would have thought there had been a good watch kept. They returned to Francis telling him they had not seen any thing, nor heard the least noise.

‘I believe the watch has gone his rounds,’ said Francis, ‘and is now retired to bed: come, let us take this upper road which leads to the gates, and enter the ditches.’ The good woman heard these words;



words; and what did she do? Why, she instantly returned by the same way as before, and came to the man who was listening on the walls and told him all she had heard, begging of him, for God's sake, to be on his guard and go to the Ghent gate to see if his companions were in a proper state, for very shortly the Ghent men would be at their post. 'I must now return,' said the woman, 'as I dare not stay longer, but I have told you all I have seen and heard: pay proper attention to it, for I shall not again come to you this night.' On saying which, she departed.

The man now remained alone, but did not treat the information he had received with indifference. He went to the gate leading to Ghent, where he found the guard playing at dice. 'Gentlemen,' said he, 'have you well fastened your gates and your barriers? for a woman came to me this night, and gave me notice of her having seen a body of Ghent men marching hither.' 'Yes,' replied they: 'our gates are fast enough: but may a scurvy night befall this woman, who has thus alarmed you at such an hour. There probably were cows and calves that had got untied, and these she fancied to have been Ghent men coming hither: they have not any such intentions.'

While this conversation was passing between the constable of the watch and the guard at the gate, Francis Atremen and his companions were executing their plan: they had got into the ditches, which were dry, as they had fished them this week, and had broken down a little of the pali-  
fades

ladders near the wall, against which they had placed their ladders and had entered the town. They marched to the market-place without any noise, and continued so until they were all collected, when they met a knight, called sir Florens de Halle, lieutenant-governor, who was there on guard with about thirty men at arms of the town. The Ghent men began to shout, 'Ghent, Ghent!' and to attack the guard whom they slew, as well as sir Florens de Halle. Thus was Oudenarde taken. You may suppose that the inhabitants, who were sleeping in their beds, were exceedingly astonished when they heard these shouts and saw the town taken by scalado without having any remedy for it. Their houses were forced open, and those within slain; for they were so suddenly surprised, there was not any help for it. Those who could escape did, leaving their houses in a state of nakedness, and leaping over the walls, saved themselves by the ponds and ditches of the town. None of the rich men could carry any part of their wealth with them, but were happy if they saved their lives. This night great numbers were killed, or drowned in the ponds; and thus ended this expedition.

In the morning, when the Ghent men saw themselves masters of the town, they sent out of it all the women and children in their shifts, or in the meanest dress they had. In this plight those who had escaped got to Mons, Arras, Condé, Valenciennes or Tournay, in the best manner they could.

News was spread every where of the capture of  
Oudenarde.



Oudenarde. The inhabitants of Ghent were greatly rejoiced at it, and said that Francis Atremen deserved to be highly prized for his valour. Francis Atremen remained governor of Oudenarde, where he gained great riches, with all sorts of stores, which was a fortunate circumstance for the captors, such as corn and wines of all sorts. Every thing fell into their hands, and all the wealth which was there from France, Flanders, and Tournay; but whatever belonged to Hainault was saved, nor was any part of that taken but what was duly paid for.

---

### CHAP. LXIII.

AYMERIGOT MARCEL, AN ENGLISH CAPTAIN ON THE BORDERS OF AUVERGNE, TAKES BY STRATAGEM THE CASTLE OF MARQUEL.—THE COUNTESS DAUPHINE RANSOMS IT FOR FIVE THOUSAND FRANCS.

**I**N this same week an almost similar adventure happened in Auvergne, where the English held several castles bordering on the territories of the count dauphin, and on those of the bishops of St. Flour and of Clermont. The English garrisons knew the country of Auvergne had been drained of men at arms, for the greater part of them were with the king of France in Flanders: they, in consequence, began to lay plans for surprising some of the strong places of Auvergne. Aymeri-  
got

got Marcel, governor of Aloise, a handsome castle situated a league distant from St. Flour\*, set off from his castle at day-break, attended only by thirty picked men. He marched silently for the lands of the count dauphin, having formed his plan to take by scalado the castle of Marquel (which the count dauphin bears for his arms), and rode through woods and a close country. Aymerigot and his men took up their lodgings early in a small wood near the castle, where they remained until sun-set, and the garrison had retired into the castle: while the governor, whose name was Girardon Buissel, was at his supper, the English, who knew well what they were to do, affixed their ladders and entered the castle at their ease.

Those passing through the court saw them climbing over the walls, and instantly cried out, 'Treason, treason!' On Girardon hearing this, he had not any hopes of saving himself but through a private passage which led from his apartment to the great tower, and which served as the dungeon of the castle. Thither he instantly retired, taking with him the keys of the gates, and shut himself in, whilst Aymerigot and his companions were otherwise employed. When they discovered that the governor had escaped into the great tower, which they were unable to take, they said they had done nothing, and re-

---

\* St. Flour,—a city of Auvergne, situated on a mountain, generally of Rion.

pented greatly having thus inclosed themselves; for, the gates being fastened, they could not get out. Aymerigot having mused a little, came to the tower, and, addressing the governor, said; 'Girardon, give us the keys of the castle-gate, and I promise you we will leave it without doing any mischief to the castle.' 'Indeed,' replied Girardon, 'but you will carry off all my cattle: how can I believe you?' 'Give me thy hand,' said Aymerigot to him, 'and I swear to thee, on my faith, that thou shalt not suffer the smallest loss.' Upon this, he like a fool, came to a small window in the tower, and offered his hand for him to pledge his faith on; but the moment Aymerigot got hold of it, he pulled it to him, squeezing it very hard, and called for his dagger, swearing he would stick his hand to the wall unless he gave up all his keys.

When Girardon saw himself thus caught, he was stupified, as indeed he had reason; for Aymerigot would not give up his hand without nailing it to the wall, unless he received the keys. With his other hand, therefore, he gave the keys, for he had them near him.

'Now see,' said Aymerigot to his companions, when he had got the keys, 'if I have not well cheated the fool: I am equal to many such feats as this.' They opened the tower gate, and, being the masters, put out of the castle the governor and all who were in it, without doing them any other harm.

News was carried to the countess dauphine,  
who

who resided at a strong castle in the good town of Zaides, a league distant, how the English had won Marquel. The lady was much surprised, and because her lord, the dauphin was not in the country, she immediately sent to all the knights and squires who were at home, to request they would assist her in recovering possession of her castle. Knights and squires, on hearing this, instantly waited on the lady and laid siege to the castle; but the English were not alarmed and held the place for fifteen days. During this time the lady entered into a treaty, and Aymenrigot received five thousand francs in hard money, for which he and his men surrendered it and returned to his garrison.

In another part those of Caluifel, of which Perrot le Brenois was captain, harassed much the countries of Auvergne and Limousin. The English had at that time upwards of sixty strong castles on the borders of Auvergne, Limousin and Quercy, and they could march from fort to fort, even unto Bourdeaux. But the castle which harassed the country the most, was Ventadour\*, one of the strongest castles in the world: the captain of it was a Breton, called Geoffry Tête noir. This Geoffry was a wicked man, shewed mercy to none, and would just as soon put to death a knight or squire as a peasant: he held all

---

\* Ventadour,—A castle in the diocese of Limoges, near Tulle.

men so cheap, and was so much feared by his soldiers that they dared not anger him.

He maintained in this castle full four hundred men, whom he paid regularly every month; and the whole country was under such subjection and awe of him, that none dared to ride over his lands. His castle of Ventadour was more largely supplied with every sort of store than that of any lord. There were warehouses of Brussels and Normandy cloths, of furs, merceries and other articles, which he sold to his people, deducting the prices from their pay. He had stores of steel, iron, wax, spices and every necessary, in as great plenty as at Paris. Sometimes he made war on the English as well as on the French, in order to be the more dreaded: and his castle of Ventadour was always provided for a siege of seven years. We will now return to the affairs of Flanders.

---

#### CHAP. LXIV.

THE KING OF FRANCE ORDERS BOURBOURG TO BE ATTACKED.—IT IS SURRENDERED TO HIM BY CAPITULATION, WHEN THE ENGLISH QUIT FLANDERS.—HE THEN DISBANDS HIS ARMY.

**W**HEN the king of France came before Bourbourg there were never seen such fine men at arms nor such numbers as he had with him. The lords and their men were all drawn up, and eager for the attack. Those who had reconnoitred the place said, it could not hold



hold out long; but that it would cost dearly in men: and several wondered why the attack was delayed. Some said, that the duke of Brittany and the earl of Flanders, who were on the other side of the town, were treating with the English to surrender without waiting for the assault. On this the Bretons, Burgundians, Normans, Germans and others, who knew there was much wealth in the place, which, if taken by storm, would probably fall to their share, were much exasperated at the thoughts of a capitulation, and began to skirmish with the infantry at the barriers, without waiting for orders from the constable or marshals of the army: indeed, they were not forbidden to assault it. This skirmish increased so much that the French set fire to the town by means of fire-arrows and cannons, so that such a flame and smoke came from the houses of Bourbourg as might have been seen forty leagues off. The attack then began with shouts; and sir William de Namur who, with his men, was in the front ranks, fought valiantly. Many gallant deeds were done, and the assailants leaped cheerfully into the mud of the ditches above the knees, when they engaged with the English at the palisade and barriers.

The garrison defended themselves handsomely: indeed they had need of their exertions, for they knew not on which side to turn themselves. They were attacked on all parts: and the houses of the town were blazing with fire, which more confounded the English than any thing else. This, however,

however, did not throw them off their guard, nor cause them to quit their posts. Sir Matthew Redman and sir Nicholas Drayton, with their men, in the centre of the town, endeavoured to check the progress of the fire; but it was such a dry season, that the smallest spark set the houses in flames. It is certain, that if the attack had begun earlier, or had not the night come on soon, the town must have been taken by storm, but the approach of night put an end to it. Sir William de Namur's division had thirty-six killed and wounded; and the army lost, according to the report of the heralds, upwards of five hundred. On the attack ceasing, the French retired to their quarters, to attend the sick and bury the dead. They said, that on the morrow they would renew the attack, and it should be irresistible.

The English, all this Saturday night, were employed in repairing the palisades which had been broken, in putting all things in a good state, and in extinguishing the fires in the town. They were in a most perilous situation, being surrounded on all sides, without means of escaping by flight.

On the Sunday morning when the king had heard mass, it was proclaimed through the army, that whoever should bring a faggot to the king's tent should receive a halfpenny, and as many faggots so many halfpence. These faggots were intended to be thrown into the ditches, so that they might resolutely pass over them, and engage with the English, on the Monday morning at the palisades,

palisadoes. Upon this all the lower ranks, and the servants, began to make faggots and carry them to the king's tent, in so much that a very large heap of them was made there.

Sunday passed without any attack. Some say that on this day, and appearances confirmed it, the duke of Brittany, who was on the opposite side of the town to the king, entered into negotiations with the English, aware of the peril they were in. He advised them to surrender the town, on their lives and fortunes being spared. This they were very willing to do, and they entreated the duke, through love of God, and in honour of his gentility, to undertake the business.

The duke sent information of what he had done to the king, his uncles, the constable of France, the count de St. Pol and to the council. Having considered how advisable it was to gain all the strong places in Flanders, in whatever manner they were offered to be surrendered, and that to win Bourbourg they must renew the attack, which would cost them, probably, numbers of lives; besides, they should at last only conquer a handful of men, who would defend themselves until they dropped; the king of France and his uncles replied, that, in God's name, they would willingly agree to a treaty, if the duke of Brittany and the constable of France would undertake it. In this manner Sunday past, without any thing being done. I heard that, in the evening, on a promise of safety, John de Châteauneuf, a Gascon, and Remonnet de St. Marc, came

came to the tent of the lord Guy de la Tremouille to play and amuse themselves, where they staid all night. On the Monday-morning they returned to Bourbourg; and at their departure the lord Guy said to them, 'John and Remonet, ye shall both be my prisoners this evening.' They replied, they would prefer being his, than belonging to any other knight.

Intelligence arrived this Sunday of the capture of Oudenarde, which much vexed sir Gilbert de Lieneghien the governor, as it had been lost through his absence; but he was exculpated from all blame by his lord the earl of Flanders, who had sent for him. The count de Blois commanded the king's guard this Sunday, and every one thought the attack would be renewed on Monday: but in the morning it was proclaimed through the army, that the king forbade any attack until further orders. This proclamation made every one quiet; and several lords guessed that the English would escape by means of a treaty, as the attack was forbidden.

After dinner, those who were to negotiate came out of the town, such as sir William Elham, sir Thomas Trivet, sir Nicholas Drayton, sir Matthew Redman and others, to the number of fourteen knights and squires, whom the duke of Brittany, the constable of France and the count de St. Pol, conducted to the tent of the king.

The king was much pleased thereat, as he had scarcely seen any English except sir Peter Courtenay,



Courtenay, who had come to Paris to fight with the lord Guy de la Tremouille, but the king and his council had made up the quarrel. Now, as the English had been much renowned for gallantry and deeds of arms, the young king of France wished to see them: and their treaty was much the better for it.

On the Monday this negotiation was carried on in the king's tent, and in his presence. There were also present the dukes of Berry, Burgundy, Bourbon, Brittany, the earl of Flanders and the constable of France, and no more. The duke of Brittany was very active in this business: and it was settled, that the English should depart from Bourbourg and Gravelines, and carry away with them as much of their wealth as they could.

Several of the Bretons, French, Normans and Burgundians were much vexed at this treaty, for they thought of partaking of the spoils; but the king and his council had ordered it otherwise.

After the treaty had been signed, the English took leave of the king of France, his uncles, the duke of Brittany and the constable, and went with the count de St. Pol, who carried them to supper at his house, where he entertained them as handsomely as he could in such a situation. After supper he had them conducted to the gates of Bourbourg, for which they testified to him their thanks.

The whole of Tuesday they employed in shoeing their horses, and in packing up all their wealth, of which they had much, and in making preparations



preparations for their departure. On the Wednesday morning they loaded their baggage-horses and began their march, passing through the army with passports from the king. The Bretons were much exasperated when they saw them so loaded; and they treated very indifferently a few who tarried behind. Thus the English marched to Gravelines, where they halted. On the Thursday morning, when they left it, they set fire to the place, burnt it to the ground, and arrived at Calais with all their pillage. They stopped there to refresh themselves, and to wait for a favourable wind to return to England.

The king of France, and all the lords of his army with their attendants, entered Bourbourg on the Thursday morning, when the Bretons began to plunder it, without excepting even the church of St. John: in which church, a pillager having mounted on an altar, with the intent of forcing out a precious stone that was in the crown of an image made to represent the person of our Lady, the image turned about, and the pillager in his fright fell from the altar and was instantly struck dead. This is a certain truth, for many persons were witnesses of it. Shortly afterwards, another pillager came with a similar intent of robbing the image; but all the bells began a peal without any one touching them, for no one could have rung them, the bell-ropes being drawn up and fastened.

On account of these miracles, the church was visited by crowds. The king made a handsome present

present to it, as did all the lords, so that the amount of their gifts was upwards of three thousand francs.

On Tuesday, the army began to decamp, and the king and constable gave permission to several of the men at arms to return home. The king thanked those who had come from distant parts, and in a particular manner the duke of Bavaria and the count of Savoy, who had come from such a distance to serve him. Each lord now returned home, and the king went to France; but the duke of Burgundy staid a short time with his father-in-law the earl of Flanders, to regulate his affairs, and resided at St. Omer.

The lord de Coucy, with many knights and squires from Ponthieu, Vimeu and Picardy entered Gravelines when the English had left it, repaired and greatly strengthened it, and made it a garrison as a frontier to Calais.

The countries of Furnes, Dunkirk, Dixmude and Nieuport were by degrees re-peopled. They had lost every thing by this war, but they now began somewhat to recover themselves.

## CHAP. LXV.

THE BISHOP OF NORWICH AND THOSE WHO ACCOMPANIED HIM IN HIS EXPEDITION ARE BADLY RECEIVED ON THEIR RETURN TO ENGLAND.—CERTAIN GREAT PERSONAGES ARE DEPUTED TO NEGOTIATE A PEACE OR TRUCE BETWEEN THE KINGS OF FRANCE AND ENGLAND.—THE DUKE OF BAVARIA DIES.

**Y**OU must know that the duke of Lancaster was not very sorry this expedition of the bishop of Norwich had failed, for by it his intended voyage to Spain and Portugal had been frustrated. When these knights returned to England, they were attacked by the common people, who told them they had behaved very badly in their expedition, for, from the prosperity they had been blessed with at the beginning, they ought to have conquered all Flanders.

Sir Thomas Trivet and sir William Elmham were more blamed than the rest; but sir Hugh Calverley was not any way found fault with, either by the king's council or the populace, for they well knew, that if they had paid attention to what he had advised, the event would have been more to their honour.

They laid to their charge, that they had sold Bourbourg and Gravelines to the king of France, which exasperated the people to a great degree,  
and

and they were at one time in danger of their lives. The king ordered these two knights to be confined in the tower of London, and during the time of their imprisonment the country was quieted: on their liberation, they threw themselves on the king's mercy\*.

At this time, negotiations were set on foot to conclude a truce between England and France, in which the Ghent men were to be included, to the great displeasure of the earl of Flanders; but he could not help it. When the army decamped from Bourbourg, the duke of Brittany remained with his cousin the earl of Flanders at St. Omer, and was desirous that a long peace or truce should be established between his lawful lord, the king of France, and the king of England. In order to make a beginning to such business, he had mentioned the subject to some of the English knights, on the Monday, when they were in the king's tent before Bourbourg; which knights had promised, on their arrival in

---

\* Writs were issued to the sheriffs of London, Somerset, Dorset, Essex, Norfolk and Suffolk, to levy on the goods of sir W. Elmham, for 3080 golden francs,—sir W. de Farndon, 1400 ditto,—sir Thomas Trivet, 1400 ditto,—sir Henry de Ferrers, 6080 ditto,—Robert Fitzrauf, 300 ditto.

They were also to be taken into custody; but no mention is made of the tower of London.

Robert de Foulmer, clerk, treasurer to the bishop of Norwich, was also imprisoned, and 5000 golden francs levied on his goods.

Dated 6th March,—pardoned 14th May.—RYMER, ann. 1384, ann. 7. Ric. II.

England, to propose it to the king, his uncles and his council. However, to shew that this matter was quite agreeable to him, and that he was anxious about it, he sent two of his knights to England under good passports.

These knights, the lord de la Houffaye and the lord de Mailly, managed matters so well that the duke of Lancaster, the earl of Buckingham, the bishop of Hereford, the lord John Holland, brother to the king, the lord Thomas Percy and others of the king's council were ordered to Calais, having full powers from the king of England to conclude a peace or truce, according to their pleasure.

On the other hand, there came to Boulogne the duke of Berry, the duke of Burgundy, the bishop of Laon and the chancellor of France, having also full powers from the king of France and his council to conclude either a peace or truce.

When assembled at Calais and Boulogne, they were delayed a short time by the non-arrival of the deputies from Spain; for the French would not enter into any treaty that did not at the same time include the Spaniards. At last, a bishop, a dean and two knights arrived on the part of the king of Spain.

As they were not empowered on either side to grant passports, that the negotiators from France might come to Calais, or the English go to Boulogne, it was settled between them, that the conference should be transferred to a village that had  
a church



a church, half way between these two towns, above Buiffem\*, called Bolingest†. Thither all the parties went, and the lords, with their council, were together for many days. The duke of Brittany and the earl of Flanders were present, and the great tent of Bruges was pitched, wherein the earl entertained at dinner the duke of Lancaster, the earl of Buckingham and the other English lords. Each negotiator kept up a grand state; but, notwithstanding there were many conferences holden, yet they could not agree upon a peace, for the French wanted the English to give up Calais, Guines, and all the fortresses which they possessed in Normandy, Brittany, Poitou, Saintonge and la Rochelle, as far as the river Garonne.

But the English would not any way listen to such a proposal; nor would they ever consent to give back such places as Calais, Guines, Cherbourg or Brest. These conferences lasted three weeks, in which they or their councils discussed these matters daily.

At this period, the gallant duke Wincestaus of Bohemia departed this life, in the town of Luxembourg: he was in his time magnificent, blythe, prudent, amorous and polite; and, when he died, it was said that the prince of the highest birth, of the most noble blood, and most numerously and honourably connected was gone. God have mercy

---

\* Probably what is now Haut Buiffon.

† Q. If not Bollinghem, now a village near Boulogne.

on his soul! He lies buried in the abbey of Vaulcler, near Luxembourg. The lady Jane, his duchefs, remained a widow, and never had any inclination to marry again. All who loved the duke were exceedingly concerned at his death.

---

## CHAP. LXVI.

DURING THESE CONFERENCES THE GHENT MEN INSULT TOURNAY.—A TRUCE IS CONCLUDED BETWEEN THE KINGS OF FRANCE AND ENGLAND AND THEIR ALLIES.

WE will now return to the conferences which were holding between the lords of France and England, half way between Calais and Boulogne, at the before-mentioned village. Neither side seemed willing to accommodate the other. Some said it was owing solely to the earl of Flanders, at the instigation of the town of Bruges, who would not consent that the Ghent men should be included in the treaty. This the English repented, and of course the treaty was stopped; for they had formed so strong a connection with Ghent, that they would not conclude a peace unless that place were included. They had sworn to observe this during the time they were together at Calais, and this compact frequently interrupted the negotiations.

Since there seemed no probability of a solid peace being made, they proposed a truce, and on  
this

this ground the conferences were continued. The earl of Flanders would willingly have had Ghent excluded, and remain in a state of war, but the English absolutely refused to consent, so that a truce was made to comprehend Ghent, and every thing was to remain in its present situation, without any surrender of forts: Oudenarde and Gravelines therefore belonged to Ghent.

Notwithstanding the conferences, the Ghent men in garrison at Oudenarde marched to Tournay, burnt the suburbs, and returned back in safety with their pillage. About Christmas the Ghent men went and received the rents of the lord d'Estournay in his own town, which made him very melancholy; and he swore to God, that if he would be pleased to assist him, whatever treaty or agreement should be made between the country of Flanders and these men, he would never pay any attention to it, but would continue the war against them to the utmost of his power, for they had robbed him of his inheritance. He was ignorant how he should live, if his friends in Brabant did not assist him, so completely had they plundered him.

With some difficulty, the lords who had held so many conferences at Bolinges concluded a truce between the kings of France and England and their allies. On the part of France was included all Spain, as well as Scotland. The king of France bound himself to send notice of this truce to the king and barons of Scotland as speedily as possible; and the bearers of this in-

formation were to have passports for their safety, in going to and returning from Scotland through England.

On the part of the English were included all their allies and adherents, wheresoever they might be. Ghent was expressly mentioned in all their deeds, to the great displeasure of the earl of Flanders. This truce was to last until the Michaelmas of the year 1384: and these commissioners were to see that the articles were duly observed, having full powers to enforce them. Public acts were made of each different article for the better observance of them; and the lords present swore they should all be loyally kept, and in no way infringed.

---

## CHAP. LXVII.

### THE EARL OF FLANDERS DIES.—THE CEREMONY OF HIS FUNERAL.

ON the conference breaking up, the French lords returned to France, and the English lords to Calais. The duke of Brittany went back to his duchy, and the earl of Flanders to St. Omer. Shortly after, he was taken so ill that he died. It was ordered that he should be buried in the church of St. Peter in Lille. The earl departed this life on the 20th day of January, in the year 1383, and his body was carried to Los, an abbey near to Lille. The body of the countess his lady, who had died five years before in the county of Rethel, was also

also brought thither, and from thence to Lille, where they were interred together in the church of St. Peter.

I will now relate the arrangement of this ceremony, and the manner in which it was conducted, and describe the order of procession at the funeral of the earl and countess of Flanders, whose bodies had been carried to Los, an abbey near Lille. When they were about to enter Lille, a great number of lords from France, Flanders, Hainault and Brabant, who had arrived there the eve of the funeral, were to meet the body at the gate of the invalids, and to carry it through the town to the church of St. Peter. They were to be armed as for war, as well as their squires who supported them.

Sir John Haluin was nearest the body, supported by Enguerrand de Volemie, and Roger de l'Espierre: then the lord de la Marque, supported by John de l'Espierre, and the lord Sauvée de Fretin; the lord de Mauvis, supported by Godfrey de Noille, and Henry de la Vacquerie. The names of those appointed to the convoy were, sir Peter de Bailleuf, near the body, supported by Guyot de Lompré, and John Louis lord of Lamberticourt: sir Sohier de Gand advanced before sir Peter de Bailleuf, supported by Hugart de Quinghen, and by Michael de la Quarrie: sir John du Moulin advanced before sir Sohier de Gand, supported by John de Quinghen and Haubequin le mareschal. Next followed the banners of the bier; first, sir Francis de Hafurquerque and sir Gouf-



fain, le Sauvage in front; sir Lancelot de la Perfonne before sir Gouffain, and sir John de la Helle before sir Lancelot de la Perfonne. Those who bore the banners of the bier and convoy came next, sir Matthew de Hunieres, and before him sir John de Helles; lord des Aveaux and sir Cierchelart de la Barre before the above named lord des Aveaux; and sir John de Paris before Cierchelart. The names of those barons who assisted to carry the corpse of the earl from the gate of the invalids, in procession through the town of Lille, to the church of St. Peter: first, sir John de Vienne, admiral of France, on the right, and the lord de Guistelles on the left; sir Valeran de Ravenal on the right, the castellan de Disquenieu on the left; the lord d'Estournay on the right, and sir Anfel de Salins on the left.

Those barons who assisted in bearing the corpse of the countess of Flanders from the gate of St. Ladre to the church of St. Peter were, the lord de Sully on the right, and the lord de Châtillon on the left side of the body; sir Guy de Pontalliers, marshal of Burgundy, on the right, sir Guy de Guistelles on the left; then sir Henry du Coing on the right, and the castellan of Furnes on the left.

I shall now mention the regulations on the day of the obsequies, which were performed in the church of St. Peter, the names of those present as well as of the squires who supported the shields during the whole mass, until the offertory: first, the duke of Burgundy by himself,  
and

and the first shield was borne before him, which shield was supported by the lord de Ravenal, by the lord de la Gouneuse, by Labequin, de la Coutre, and by John de Pontalliers brother to the marshal of Burgundy.

The second shield was borne before my lord John of Artois, count d'Eu, and the lord Philip de Bar, by Valeran de la Sale and Lesclaus d'Annequin. Next followed the count de la Marche and the lord Philip d'Artois; the shield was borne by Gillon de Labert and Robin de Florigny. Then came sir Robert de Namur, and with him his nephew sir William de Namur: the shield was borne by Chaux Bernard and Girard de Sternaille.

The shields of the convoy: the lord d'Ang-hien, and with him sir John de Namur; the shield carried by Aillart de Ponthées and Henry de Moucy. Next followed sir Esne de Châtillon, and the lord de Fere; the shield supported by John de Heluin and Edward de Castron; then the lord d'Ancoing and the lord de Guiftelles: the shield-bearers were Triftan de Landres and John du Béart; then the lord de Moriennes and the lord de Silly: the shield borne by Fresingue and by Damas de Bucy.

Then came those who were to make offerings of the war-horses of the earl: first my lord de Châtillon and sir Simon de Lalain, bailiff of Hainault. These lords were on foot, and the horse was armed and caparifoned; with the second horse were sir Valeran de Ravenal and the castellan de Dixmude: with the third, sir Hugh

de Melun and the lord d'Auicy: the lord de Burnel and the lord de Brumeu were with the fourth horse.

Then came those who were to offer the steeds of the convoy: first, sir Henry d'Ancoing and sir Gerard de Guistelles; with the second, the lord de Montigny and the lord de Rafenghien; the lord de la Haurade and the castellan de Furnes were with the third; and the fourth had the lord de Saugmelles and sir Rowland de la Clicque.

Next came those who were to offer the earl's swords of war; my lord admiral of France bore the first, the lord de Rary the second, the marshal of Burgundy the third, the lord de Saint Py the fourth. The names of those who offered the swords of the convoy: sir William de Ponthieu bore the first, sir William de la Trimouille the second, the castellan of Ypres the third, and sir Guy de Hâncourt the fourth.

Then came those who offered the war-helmets of the earl; the lord de Mailly bore the first; the second was borne by sir William de Hornes and sir Ansel de Salins: sir John Doppem and the castellan of St. Omer had the third; and sir Guy de Guistelles and le Galois d'Aunoy the fourth.

The helmets of the convoy were borne and offered as follows: the first by sir Josse de Hal-lain and sir Oliver de Guffy; the second by the lord d'Yfebobecque and the lord de Lalain; \*

---

\* The third is not mentioned in any of my editions.

the fourth by fir Tristan du Bois and fir John de Jumont.

Then came those who offered the banners of war: the lord de Listrenaille offered the first, fir Leoncel d'Airainnies the second, fir Giles de la Gouneuse the third, and fir John de Luifolom the fourth. The banners of the convoy were next offered: the first by fir Orengoïs de Rely, the third\* by fir John de Disquenue and the fourth by fir Vilaines de la Clicque.

Those who, after the obsequies were ended, laid the body of the earl of Flanders in the earth were, fir John de Vienne admiral of France, the lord de Guistelle, fir Valeran de Ravenal, the castellan de Dixmude, the lord de Ray and fir Anfel de Salins.

Those who interred the body of the countess, confort to the earl, were, fir Guy de la Trimouille, the lord de Châtillon, the sénéchal of Burgundy, the lord Gerard de Guistelles, fir Henry d'Antoing and the castellan of Furnes.

It should be observed, that all who officially had entered the church of St. Peter at Lille, with the corpse in the evening, remained there until the mass of the morrow, as well those knights who were armed as those who bore the banners and the squires who led the horses.

There were about four hundred men, clothed in black, appointed to carry the body of the earl and countess of Flanders, through Lille, to the church of St. Peter, and each of them bore a torch in his hand. These four hundred men

---

\* The second is forgotten.

held their torches on the morrow in the church during mass, and they were all of them officers in the principal towns or of the earl's household.

The archbishop of Rheims celebrated the mass, assisted by the bishops of Paris, Tournay, Cambrai and Arras, and likewise by five abbots. There were in the church, during the obsequies, seven hundred candles or thereabouts, and each candle weighed one pound. On the catafalque were five banners: in the centre, the banner of Flanders; on the right, that of Artois; on the left, lower down, that of Boulogne; the fourth of Nevers, and the fifth of Rethel. The catafalque was emblazoned on the right side with the scutcheons of Flanders, and on the left with those of Flanders and Brabant. Down the church were twelve hundred and twenty-six candles, similar to those around the bodies.

There was not any lady or damsel present on the part of the duke or duchess of Burgundy except the lady of the governor of Lille.

A magnificent dinner was provided, and every knight and squire were gratuitously entertained the day and night of the obsequies; and all the black cloth they had worn was given to them.

After this ceremony, they all returned to their homes.

The duke of Burgundy placed in the garrisons and towns in Flanders, knights and squires, notwithstanding the truce which had been made between France and England, and between their allies, for every one was on his guard. The duke of Burgundy then returned to France, but  
the



the lady-duchess remained a considerable time in Artois.

---

## CHAP. LXVIII.

THE EARLS OF NORTHUMBERLAND AND NOTTINGHAM RAISE A BODY OF ENGLISH TO MAKE AN EXCURSION INTO SCOTLAND.—AMBASSADORS ARE SENT FROM FRANCE TO SCOTLAND, TO NOTIFY THE TRUCES WHICH HAD BEEN MADE BETWEEN FRANCE AND ENGLAND.

**Y**OU have before heard how the lords of France who had attended the conferences in Bolinge had engaged on their departure to notify the truces that had been made between them and the English, to the Scots and to the king of Scotland, so that any misunderstanding should be prevented between the two countries.

The council of France, however, to say the truth, did not use all the diligence they should have done; for they were to have sent instant information of this truce, which they did not do. I know not how this happened, except it were owing to the duke of Burgundy being so much engaged by the death of his father-in-law the earl of Flanders, and taken up with the business of his obsequies, as you have heard related. He likewise did not imagine the English would have acted as they did; for, soon after Easter, the earls of Northumberland and Nottingham, and the barons of Northumberland, collected a body of about two thousand lances  
and

and six thousand archers, with which they marched by Berwick and Roxburgh, and entered Scotland.

They burnt all the lands of the earl of Douglas and of the lord Lindsay, and left nothing unmolested as far as Edinburgh. The barons of Scotland were not apprised of this invasion, and took the affair much to heart, saying they would revenge it to the utmost of their power. They added, that the English ought to have been at peace with them according to what had been reported of the truce; but they knew not this for certain, as in fact it had not at that time been notified to them; and they well knew that they had not entered into any treaty with the English. The war was thus begun; and they had suffered in the first instance from it, which greatly displeased them.

Intelligence soon spreads abroad. It was known in Flanders, particularly at Sluys, from some merchants who had sailed from Scotland, that the English had invaded that country, and that king Robert and his barons were collecting a numerous force to engage the English. It was also known in France that the English had taken the field, and they said among themselves that a battle must be the consequence.

The dukes of Berry and Burgundy, and the king's council, hearing this news, said it was foolishly done not to have notified the truce to Scotland, according to their promise. It was then ordered by the king, his uncles and his council, that sir Hemart de Massé, a very prudent



dent knight, should go to Scotland, properly authorised, and with him sir Peter de Flamel; and a serjeant at arms of the king, who was of the Scots nation, and called Janequin Champenois, was likewise ordered to attend them, because he was acquainted with the country and understood the language.

While these ambassadors were making their preparations, and the English overrunning Scotland, the news of which was spoken of every where, several men at arms from France who had fixed their residence at Sluys, not knowing where to offer their services, as a truce was now established between Flanders and England, resolved to go to Scotland. They heard the news of this war between Scotland and England; and it was confidently said at Sluys, that an engagement must very soon take place. These men at arms, such as sir Geoffry de Charny, sir John de Plaisly, sir Hugh de Boulon, sir Sainge de Villiers, sir Garnier de Libourne, sir Garnier de Gussangin, sir Odin de Motin, sir Robert de Campignen, James de Montfort, John de Heluin, John de Mellez, Michael de la Barre, William Gobart, heard this information with pleasure: they might amount to about thirty men at arms, knights and squires.

In order to advance their renown, they had determined among themselves, since they knew not where to offer their arms, to hire a vessel and seek for adventures with the Scots. This resolution they followed, and having embarked all their arms and baggage, they themselves  
went

went on board and set sail from Sluys as soon as the wind became favourable.

They left their horses behind, on account of the dangers of the sea and the length of the voyage: besides, the mariners who conducted them knew they could not land at Edinburgh, Dunbar, nor any of the adjoining ports, on account of the English fleet, with the purveyances which followed the army, being masters of all the havens.

About this time the ambassadors from France arrived in England, and waited on the king and his uncles, who entertained them handsomely. They dissimulated a little the first day, because they knew a war was carrying on in Scotland: but, on hearing their people had finished the business, they hastened the messengers from France, sir Hemart de Massé and the others, and, for their greater security, ordered some of the king's heralds to attend them through England, and to have all towns and castles opened to receive them. This being arranged, they set out on their embassy.

The French knights who had sailed from Sluys, by coasting the shores of Holland and England, and carefully avoiding the English fleets, arrived safely at a small sea-port in Scotland called Montres\*. The Scots who lived in

---

\* Montres. Mr. D. M'Pherson, in his excellent Geographical Illustrations of Scottish History, translates it Melrose; but I think it must be a mistake, as Froissart calls it, 'un port.' From what follows, it must be some small port & Dundee; and I should suppose it to mean Montrose.

the town, hearing that the passengers were Frenchmen come thither to seek for deeds of arms, shewed them great kindness, and supplied them with every necessary to the utmost of their power. When these knights and squires had refreshed themselves for two days, and had gained sufficient intelligence, they set out, mounted on hackneys and rode to Dundee, from whence, continuing their journey as well as they could, they came to Perth, a handsome town. The river Tay runs by it: there is a good sea-port, from whence one may sail to any part of the world. On their arrival at Perth, they learnt that the English had retired, and that the king and all the nobility of Scotland were assembled in parliament at Edinburgh. Upon this they resolved to send sir Garnier de Cuiffangin and Michael de la Barre, to Edinburgh, to have a conference with the king and the nobles, to know if they could be employed, and to testify their good will, at least, in coming from Flanders to Scotland: sir Geoffry de Charny and the rest were to remain at Perth until they heard how they had been received.

As they had resolved, so was it executed: the ambassadors set out from Perth and came to Edinburgh, where the king was. The earl of Douglas was there, whose name was James, for sir William, the present earl's father, was lately dead: there were present also the earls of Moray and Orkney, the lords de Verfi, Sutherland, Lindfay and his six brothers, who were all of them knights. These Scots lords entertained



tained very handsomely the knights of France. Sir Garnier explained to the king and his barons the intentions of his companions, and their reasons for coming to Edinburgh.

The ambassadors from France, sir Hemart de Massé, sir Peter de Flamel and Jahequin Champenois, arrived with copies of the truces entered into between the kings of France and England; but the Scots having no inclination to accept of them, dissembled, by saying that they had come too late, and that they should not now pay any attention to them, for the English had just made a grievous war on the country. King Robert did every thing he could for their being accepted, saying, that in truth since they had been notified to them, they had not any pretence for a refusal: this caused a difference between the king and the knights of his country.

The earl of Douglas, the earl of Moray, the children of Lindsay, and such knights and squires of Scotland who wished for war, held a secret meeting in the church of St. Giles at Edinburgh, where the French knights, sir Garnier and Michael de la Barre, were desired to attend. The Scots barons said they would enter into a treaty with their companions, and they should soon hear good news from them, but it must be kept secret. Upon this they returned to Perth, and related all they had seen and heard.

## CHAP. LXIX.

THE BARONS AND KNIGHTS OF SCOTLAND, IN CONJUNCTION WITH SOME FRENCH KNIGHTS, UNDERTAKE AN EXPEDITION INTO ENGLAND WITHOUT THE KNOWLEDGE OF THE KING OF SCOTLAND, WHO SENDS A HERALD TO MAKE HIS EXCUSES TO THE KING OF ENGLAND.

**S**IR Geoffry de Charny and the other knights and squires were much pleased at this intelligence. Leaving Perth, they continued their march until they arrived at Edinburgh. They gave not the smallest hint of their expectations, and had not remained there twelve days when the earl of Douglas gave them a secret invitation to come to him, and at the same time sent horses to conduct them to his castle of Dalkeith. On the morrow after their arrival, he carried them to where the barons and knights of Scotland were mustering their men. In three days time they amounted to upwards of fifteen thousand on horseback, all armed according to the usual manner of the country. When the whole were collected, they said they would make an inroad, and revenge themselves on the English for the mischiefs they had done.

They began their march through the woods and forests of their country, and entered North-  
umberland,

umberland, on the lands of the lord Percy, which they pillaged and burnt. They advanced further, and then returned through the estates of the earl of Nottingham and the lord Mowbray, to whose lands they did much damage. They passed by Roxburgh; for they had a very large booty with them, as well in men as in cattle, and returned to their own country without any loss; for the English had been some time disbanded, and could not be re-assembled in time to oppose them: they were, therefore, obliged to suffer this insult, as they had before given a similar one to the Scots.

The king of Scotland could easily excuse himself for this inroad, as he had been kept entirely ignorant of their assembling and march. Since the country was so inclined, it was not material that he should know any thing about it; but supposing he had known it, and there had been no other treaties than those which existed between the two countries, they would not have acted otherwise for him.

Notwithstanding the barons of Scotland, with the French knights, had thus invaded England, sir Hemart de Massé and sir Peter de Flamel continued to reside at Edinburgh, near king Robert: they allowed the Scots to act as they pleased, that it might not be said, nor the English suppose, that it was through their fault, or those of their country who had come with them, that the treaties had been infringed which had been concluded at Bolinghen by the nobles and council of France,  
England

England and Castille. The king of Scotland and the ambassadors sent each a herald to England fully instructed what they were to say.

When the heralds arrived in England, they found the whole country in motion, and eager to renew the war, by marching into Scotland. The duke of Lancaster and earl of Cambridge were, however, anxious to go to Portugal and Castille in the course of the year, with a large body of men at arms and archers, under the power of one or both of them; for they considered themselves as heirs by their ladies to all Castille, and they wished to renew the war between the king of Portugal and the king of Castille. King Fernando was dead, and the Portuguese had crowned his bastard brother don John, a valiant man who wished for a war with the Spaniards, but not without having succours from England. Of this the duke of Lancaster was well informed, but dissembled his knowledge as well as he could, and endeavoured through his friends to prevent any forces being collected to carry on a war with Scotland. It was asserted, that the king of Scotland had refused to authorise the war which the French and Scots knights wished for, and that the late expedition had been made without his knowledge.

The Scots herald on his appearance before the king of England and his uncles, well knowing his duty, threw himself on his knees, and requested that, as herald from the king of Scotland, he might deliver his message.

The king and the nobles granted his request:

he then declared why he had been particularly sent by the king and the ambassadors from France, and excused them, by saying, that the king of Scotland had graciously received the embassy from France, and having assented to the treaties which the king of France had made, should conform to the truce: that he had ordered, as strongly as lay in him, his vassals to do the same; but that the borderers of Scotland, on the lands of the lord Percy and the earl of Nottingham, such as the earl of Douglas, the earl of Mar his uncle, sir Archibald, sir Ramè, sir Peter, sir William and sir Thomas Douglas, all the brothers of Lindsay and Ramsay, with sir William Seton, would not attend the parliament in which this treaty was agreed to, nor would they accept it; for they said there had been such damage done to their lands as was disagreeable to themselves and friends, which they would revenge the very first opportunity. These lords, whom I have just named, collected their forces to invade England, but they never mentioned it to the king, nor to any of his household, for they well knew he would not have consented to it.

‘ They say, however, in Scotland, that England first began hostilities; that, my lords, you knew well a truce had been concluded beyond sea; and that on your return from Calais, it ought to have been signified to us. They say likewise, that the ambassadors from France, when they passed through this country, were detained from coming to us as they were bound to do, and that you kept them too long here with your entertainments :



tertainments: on which accounts, this misunderstanding has happened between Scotland and England, urged on by those who had long meditated it, and under shadow of dissimulation the greater part of it has been effected. But my most redoubted and sovereign lord, the king of Scotland, and the ambassadors from the king of France, who reside at present with him, exculpate themselves from any knowledge of the last expedition which the barons and knights of Scotland made into England, having been completely ignorant of it.

‘ Therefore, to redress all complaints and place things on a proper footing, I am ordered to say, that if you will conform to the treaties concluded beyond sea through the discretion and wisdom of the counsellors of the king of France and your own, and will agree that the truces last the time such truces have been agreed to with my very redoubted and sovereign lord the king of Scotland, he and his council will confirm them, and swear to keep and maintain them, out of respect to the king of France and his council, as well by himself as by his vassal; and upon this subject you will be pleased to give me your answer.’

The king of England and his uncle paid attention to the herald while he was speaking, and willingly heard him. The duke of Lancaster told him, that indeed he should have an answer. They ordered him to remain in London, where he had had his audience, to wait the answer from the king of England.

## CHAP. LXX.

THE TRUCES WHICH HAD BEEN MADE BETWEEN THE FRENCH, THE ENGLISH AND THEIR ALLIES, ARE PROCLAIMED IN SCOTLAND.—THE FRENCH KNIGHTS, ON THEIR RETURN FROM SCOTLAND, ARE IN GREAT DANGER FROM THE ZEALANDERS.

**A**T the end of two days, the council agreed on an answer. Sir Simon Burley, chamberlain to the king, drew it up: and by these means all disputes were settled. To say the truth, the lords of England who had been at the conferences at Bolinghen had not acted very honourably when they had consented to order their men to march to Scotland and burn the country, knowing that a truce would speedily be concluded: and the best excuse they could make was, that it was the French, and not they, who were to signify such truce to the Scots.

The herald was told, that in God's name he was welcome, and that it was the intention of the king of England, his uncles and council, to keep and maintain what they had sealed and sworn to, and that they would noways infringe it, but, on the contrary, would preserve it, for those who had been most active had lost the most.

The herald demanded all this to be put in writing, that he might the more readily be believed.

lieved. They made him rich presents, and in such quantity that he was well contented, and greatly thanked the king and his nobles.

Having left London, he continued his journey until he arrived in Scotland, where the ambassadors from France were waiting to know his answer, for they were anxious to learn how the English would conduct themselves. When they saw the answers from the king and his uncles, in the sealed letters which were delivered to them, they were well satisfied and much rejoiced thereat. Thus was the truce continued for this year between England and Scotland, and for greater security it was proclaimed throughout the two kingdoms.

The French ambassadors returned to their own country, through England, without any accident, and related to the king of France and his uncles what they had done, and the opposition they had met with: in short, they recounted every thing you have just heard.

What sir Geoffry de Charny and the French knights in his company found that the truce was to be established between Scotland and England, they took their leave of the barons of Scotland, more especially of the earls of Douglas and Moray, who had shewn them much kindness.

These barons of Scotland, as well as some other knights, said to them, joking,— ‘ Gentlemen, you have seen the condition and manner of our country, but you have not seen its whole strength and power. Know that Scotland is the country of the world most dreaded by the English,

lish; for we can, as you have seen, enter England at our pleasure, without any danger from the sea: if we were in greater numbers, we should do them more mischief than we are now able to do. Be so good therefore, when you are in France, to tell this to your knights and squires, who shall be eager for renown, to excite them to come hither in search of deeds of arms. We can assure you, that if we had a thousand lances from France, with the good people here, we would give such a considerable blow to England that it should be visible for forty years to come. Have the goodness to remember this when you shall be on the other side of the water.'

The French knights replied they would not fail to do so, for it was not a thing to be forgotten. Upon this, they embarked on board a vessel they had engaged to carry them to Sluys; but they had contrary winds when at sea, which obliged them to run for a port in Zealand called la Virille\*.

When they landed there, they thought they were in a place of safety, but were disappointed, for the Normans had lately visited that coast, and had done, as it was said, much mischief to the Zealanders. These knights and squires were in great danger; for, while a different language was held in the town, their vessel was seized, their trunks broken open, and their arms taken away, and they themselves in risk of losing their lives.

---

\* La Virille. Q. if not la Brille.

At that time there was in the town a squire of the count de Blois, whose name was Jacob, an agreeable man, who assisted them in all things. He talked with the principal people of the town, and with such good effect that a part of their baggage was restored to them.

In order to save them from their peril, for he knew the people were much enraged against them, and had intentions of attacking them on the sea, as they had sent notice of their plans to the neighbouring towns, and were in sufficient force to do so, he shewed them much courtesy, and, out of affection to them, explained how greatly the country was exasperated against them, but that, out of regard to his lord and the realm of France, he would counteract it. They warmly thanked him for his kind intentions. Well, what did Jacob do? He went to a mariner and hired a vessel to carry him and his company wherever he pleased, saying his intentions were to go to Dordrecht. The mariners having agreed to this proposal, he and his company embarked on board the vessel, and at first made for Dordrecht; but, when Jacob saw it was time to alter their course, he said to the sailors, 'Now, mind what I am going to say: I have hired with my money this vessel to carry me whithersoever I shall please: turn, therefore, the helm for Strueghene\*, as I want to go thither.' The sailors refused to do so, saying they had been only engaged to sail to Dordrecht.

---

\* Strueghene. Q. Gertruydenbergh.



‘Attend to me,’ replied Jacob; ‘do what I have ordered you, if you do not wish to be put to death.’

The failors dared not make any reply, for they were not the strongest; so they at once turned the helm and set the sails, and made for the town of Etrimohee\*, where they arrived without fear of danger, for it belonged to the count de Blois. After they had refreshed themselves, they departed and returned through Brabant and Hainault to their own country, thanking Jacob for the kindness he had done them.

When sir Geoffry de Charny, sir John de Plaissy and the other knights and squires who had been in Scotland, returned to France, they were interrogated as to news from that country. They related all they had seen and heard from the barons and knights of Scotland. Sir John de Vienne, admiral of France, conversed on the subject with sir Geoffry de Charny, who was surprised, as well as other barons of France, to hear that the French, through Scotland, could gain an easy entrance into England. Sir Hemart de Massé continued the conversation, and added, the Scots could not any way love the English; and he had been directed to say this by order of the Scots council, that the king of France and his uncles might have information of it.

The French instantly determined, as soon as the truces should be expired, to send a powerful

---

Etrimohee. Q.

army to Scotland to lay waste England. This was planned by the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, who at that time governed the realm at their pleasure, and the constable of France; but the whole was kept very secret.

---

## CHAP. LXXI.

THE LORD DESTOURNAY ASSEMBLES FORCES TO  
RETAKE OUDENARDE.—HE CONQUERS IT BY  
STRATAGEM.

**Y**OU have before heard how Francis Atremen took by escalado the town of Oudenarde, while the treaties for a truce were negotiating before Bergues and Bourbourg, to the great surprise of Tournay and the adjacent towns. The garrison of Oudenarde, during this time, had overrun the country : and done much mischief to the territories of Tournay : the whole estate of the lord Destournay was under their subjection. They had at the feast of Christmas collected his rents and duty-fowls, from the towns belonging to him, for their own use, which displeased him and his friends exceedingly. He therefore declared, that whatever truce or respite there might be between the kings of France and England with the Flemings, he should not pay any attention to it, but would exert himself in doing them as much damage as he was able.

able, for they had so grievously oppressed him that he was become a poor man.

The lord Destournay turned his whole attention to retake Oudenarde, and succeeded through the friendship of some knights and squires from France, Flanders and Hainault, who assisted him in it. When he sent to these friends, several were ignorant of his intentions. The expedition was undertaken on the 17th day of May 1384; for the lord Destournay learnt by his spies, that Francis Atremen was gone to Ghent, trusting to the truce which had been made with the French: by so doing he committed a fault, and was no longer attentive to guard Oudenarde, as I shall relate.

The lord Destournay formed a considerable ambuscade of four hundred knights, squires and good men at arms, whom he had entreated to assist him. These he posted in the wood of Lart, near to the gate of Oudenarde. There were among them sir John du Moulin, sir James de laTrimouille, sir Gilbert and sir John Cacque-lan, sir Roland de l'Espierre, sir Blanchart de Calonne, and the lord d'Estripouille, who was created a knight.

I will now relate their stratagem, and how those of Oudenarde were deceived by it. They filled two carts with provision, which they put under the charge of four hardy and determined men dressed as carters, clothed in grey frocks, but armed underneath. These carters drove the carts to Oudenarde, and gave the guards to un-

stand that they had brought provision from  
Hainault

Hainault to victual the place. The guards not thinking but all was right, drew up the portcullis, and allowed them to advance on the bridge. The carters knocked out the pins which held the traces of the horses, and flung them into the ditch. Upon this, the guards cried out to them, 'Why do not you drive on?' and taking hold of the horses, drove them before them, and thus left the carts standing, for, as I said, they were unharnessed. The guards then found out that they had been deceived and betrayed, and began to strike the carters, who defended themselves ably; for they were well armed under their frocks, and were men of tried courage. Having killed two of the guards, they were instantly reinforced; for the lord Destournay followed them so close with his men, that the guards fled into the town, crying out, 'Treason, treason!' but, before the townsmen could be awakened, the men at arms had entered it, and killed all who put themselves on their defence, shouting out as they came to the square, 'Victory!'

Thus was Oudenarde won. Of the Ghent men, full three hundred were killed or drowned. A large sum was found in the town belonging to Francis Atremen, which I heard amounted to fifteen thousand francs.

News was soon spread abroad, that Oudenarde had been taken during the truce, which angered the Ghenters much, as was natural, for it nearly affected them. They held a meeting on this subject, and resolved to send to the duke

duke of Burgundy to remonstrate with him on the capture of Oudenarde during the truce, and to say, that if it were not delivered back to them they should consider the truce as broken. But the duke excused himself, declaring he had not interfered any way in the business, and that as God might help him, he was entirely ignorant of this expedition of the lord Destournay : he added, that he would willingly write to him, which he did, and order him to give back Oudenarde, for it was neither honourable to him nor agreeable to the duke to capture any towns, castles or forts during a truce.

The lord Destournay acknowledged the letters from the duke, and in answer said, that the garrison of Oudenarde had always made war on his lands, whether truce or no truce, and had seized on his inheritance, and that he had never consented to any truce with them ; that he had conquered Oudenarde in fair war, and that he would keep possession of it as his own proper inheritance until Flanders and Ghent should be completely re-united, for his other property had been ruined by the war.

Things remained in this state, for nothing better could be done.

Francis Atremen was very much blamed for not having better guarded the place, and especially by the lord de Harzelles, inasmuch that Francis was wroth with the knight, and high words ensued, adding, whatever he may have done in regard to Oudenarde, he had always acquitted himself loyally towards Ghent. This provoked



provoked answers, and the lie was given on both sides. Shortly after, the lord de Harzelles was killed; and some say that Francis Atremen and Peter du Bois were the authors of it.

About this time, the Ghent men requested the king of England to send them a valiant man for governor, and one who was connected with the crown by blood. In consequence, the king sent to Ghent one of his knights, a gallant man, of sufficient prudence to govern the town: his name was sir John Bouchier\*, who remained governor of Ghent upwards of a year and half.

---

## CHAP LXXII.

THE DUKE OF ANJOU DIES AT A CASTLE NEAR NAPLES. HIS WIDOW IS ADVISED TO SOLICIT THE POPE FOR THE POSSESSION OF PROvence.

**Y**OU have before heard how the duke of Anjou, who stiled himself king of Sicily and Jerufalem, had marched into la Puglia and Calabria, and had conquered the whole country as far as Naples: but the Neapolitans would never turn to his party, and continued the support they had always given to the lord Charles Durazzo. The duke of Anjou remained on this expedition three whole years; you may suppose, therefore, that his expences were very great, for

---

\* Sir John Bouchier. Lord Bouchier of Essex. See Dugdale.

there

there is no treasury, however rich, but men at arms will drain it: whoever is desirous of their services must pay them well, if they expect any advantage from them. It must certainly have cost the duke immense sums of money; but those who sunk his treasury the deepest, were the earl of Savoy and the Savoyards. That earl, however, and a great many of his knights, died on this expedition, which weakened the duke of Anjou in men. It was on this account that he sent to France to implore the assistance of his brothers the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, who did not fail him in his necessities, but replied that they would support him with men and money.

These two dukes considered who would be the proper persons to send on this expedition. After having maturely weighed every thing, they thought they could not fix better than on the gallant lord de Coucy and the lord d'Anghien, count de Conversano\*, whose earldom is situated in la Puglia.

These two lords, having been solicited to undertake the business by the king of France and his uncles, cheerfully complied, for it was highly honourable to them. They instantly began their preparations, and set off as speedily as possible with a handsome company of men at arms: but when they arrived at Avignon, and were busily employed in forwarding their troops and other business, certain intelligence was brought

---

\* Conversano is a town in the Neapolitan dominions, near Bari: its bishoprick is suffragan to Bari.

them

them of the death of the duke of Anjou at a castle near Naples\*.

The lord de Coucy, on hearing this, advanced no further, seeing that the expedition was at an end; but the lord de Conversano continued his march, for he had many things to settle in his own country, in la Puglia and in Conversano.

This intelligence was soon known in France to the king and his uncles, who supported the death of the king of Sicily as well as they could.

When madame d'Anjou, who resided at Angers, heard of the death of her lord, you may imagine she was greatly afflicted. The count Guy de Blois her cousin-german, who lived at Blois, on receiving the news, set out with all his equipage to visit her at Angers, where he remained a considerable time comforting and advising her to the best of his abilities.

From thence the queen came to France (for she styled herself queen of Naples, Sicily, la Puglia, Calabria and Jerusalem) to wait on the king and the dukes of Berry and Burgundy, to have their advice and comfort: she was accompanied by her two sons, Louis and Charles. The lady was advised by the nobles of her blood, to go to Avignon, and entreat of the pope that she might have possession of Provence, which is a territory dependant on Sicily. The queen

---

\* He died at Bisélie, near Bari, the 20th or 21st September 1384.—*Art de Verifier les Dates.*

The authors of the *Nouvelle Dictionnaire Historique*, by mistake, have placed his death at Paris, but with the same date,

approved the advice, and made preparations for her journey, carrying with her her eldest son Louis, who was every where on the road called king, from being heir to the king his father; but these affairs were not so speedily terminated as I have pointed them out.

---

## CHAP. LXXIII.

PREPARATIONS ARE MADE IN FRANCE FOR THE RENEWAL OF THE WAR WITH ENGLAND.—THE DUCHESS OF BRABANT SUCCEEDS IN FORMING A MARRIAGE BETWEEN THE CHILDREN OF BURGUNDY AND THOSE OF HAINAULT.

**D**URING the winter, the French were busily employed in preparations to send forces to Scotland; but the truces were prolonged between the French and English, and their allies, from Michaelmas to the ensuing first day of May. They, however, continued their preparations by sea and land, for it was the intention of the council of France to carry on the war with vigour in the course of the next summer; and the admiral of France was to sail for Scotland with two thousand spears, knights and squires. On the other hand, the duke of Bourbon and the count de la Marche were ordered into Languedoc, Limousin and Auvergne, with two thousand men, to recover certain

tain castles which the English and pillagers held, and which did much mischief to the country.

Great numbers of battle-axes were ordered to be made in Picardy and Hainault for the expedition into Scotland; and in Artois, Lille, Douay and Tournay, much biscuit was made, and various other stores got ready along the coast from Harfleur to Sluys, which was the principal harbour whence this armament was intended to be embarked.

The duchess of Brabant, widow of Winceslaus duke of Bohemia, by whose death she had lost a companion and much comfort, which had caused her great grief, resided with her attendants at Brussels. She was much hurt at the troubles which existed in Flanders, and, if she had possessed the means, would most cheerfully have put an end to them; for she was daily hearing how the Ghent men were strengthening themselves by an alliance with the English, who promised them great support. She also saw that her nephew and niece of Burgundy, who were in truth her heirs, and among the greatest princes of the world, as well by their own heritages, as by what they had in reversion, were very uneasy at these disturbances in Ghent. She knew that duke Albert, regent of Hainault, had two fine sons and two handsome daughters, neither of whom were yet married; but she had heard that the duke of Lancaster was very desirous to accomplish the marriage of his daughter Philippa, who had been borne to him by the lady Blanche his first wife, with the eldest son



of duke Albert, who, by his own right, was heir to the countries of Hainault, Holland and Zealand.

This lady foresaw, that if such an alliance should take place between Hainault and England, the French would be much hurt, and the fair country of Hainault harrassed either secretly or openly, by all those who should pass and repass from France to Flanders. In addition to this, the Hollanders and Zealanders who bordered on the sea assisted the Ghent men in various ways, of which the duke of Burgundy and his council had been informed. He did not love duke Albert the better for this; not, however, that he was any way to be blamed for it; for with regard to the Hollanders and Zealanders, as the war in Flanders no way concerned them, he could not, neither ought he to have forbidden the free course of commerce.

The good lady having considered all these things, and the dangerous consequences which might ensue, resolved to bring the duke of Burgundy and duke Albert to a good understanding, and offered herself as guarantee of all the treaties. She was determined also to prevail on the duke of Burgundy to receive the men of Ghent into his mercy.

Clerks and messengers were immediately set to work: and she managed so well that a conference was fixed to meet at Cambray on the part of the two dukes. They both assented to it, as well as their council, though neither of them knew the subjects this conference was to treat of.

To this conference, which they had under their seals appointed to be holden at Cambray on the twelfth day in the ensuing January, the two dukes came, attended by their councils. The duchess of Brabant came thither also, who was the mover in the business. She first addressed the duke of Burgundy, saying; 'He was the greatest prince on earth, and had very fine children: she, however, would be more happy if they were placed in a different situation from what they actually occupied, which would increase their worth; and, for the present, she could neither see nor point out any better place than Hainault, Holland and Zealand, which would unite the whole country together, and give greater fear and alarm to its enemies; for, fair nephew,' added she to the duke of Burgundy, 'I know for a truth, that the duke of Lancaster, who is so powerful in England, is extremely anxious for his daughter to espouse my nephew, William of Hainault, and I certainly wish such good fortune may fall to your children rather than to the English.'

'My good aunt,' replied the duke of Burgundy. 'I return you my thanks, and, as a proof that I believe you, I shall allow you to unite my daughter Margaret with the youth of Hainault.' Upon such good success, she instantly began to treat of this marriage. Duke Albert, to whom the proposition was quite new, replied very courteously, but said, he had not with him those whom he wished to consult on the subject. 'And what advice do you want?'

answered the duchefs, 'when it is a question to act properly, and keep your country in peace.' 'My wife,' replied the duke; 'for without her I shall do nothing: she is as much interested in my children as I 'am; and, besides, fair aunt, it will be proper that the nobility of the country be apprised of it.' The duchefs answered, 'Well, God's will be done.' She thought the best she could now do was to let them separate in good humour with each other, and desire they would permit her to call them again together in the same city during Lent, and that they would bring the duchefs of Burgundy and madame de Hainault, with their councils, along with them.

The lady acted in all this so secretly, that very few persons knew any thing of the matter, nor why this conference had been holden. In this state the two dukes left Cambray: the duke of Burgundy went to the city of Arras, where his lady was, and duke Albert returned to his duchefs in Holland.

The duchefs of Brabant returned to her own country, and continually wrote to each party, but secretly. She had great difficulty to bring them and their ladies to Cambray, and laboured hard at it; for she was very eager this marriage should take place, to confirm the union and friendship of Flanders, Brabant and Hainault. The duchefs managed so well that the different parties and their councils met her and her council at Cambray, where was a grand display of pomp, for each was anxious to do honour to the other.

The

The duchess Margaret of Burgundy and the duchess Margaret of Hainault were present, and the last very active in this business. She said, that if they wished to marry their son with Margaret of Burgundy, John of Burgundy must marry her daughter, by which the ties of affection would be the more strengthened.

It was much against the inclination of the duke of Burgundy to marry his children at once and to the same family. He thought it sufficient for his daughter to marry the heir of Hainault, and excused himself for not agreeing to the marriage of his son John, on account of his youth. The duke's intention was to marry him to Catharine of France, sister to his nephew the king of France. These treaties and conferences were, therefore, on the point of being broken; for the duchess of Bavaria declared, a marriage should never take place with her children, unless they were both married at the same time; and this resolution she kept, notwithstanding all they could say to make her alter it. The duchess of Brabant took great pains in going from one to the other, and in preventing the treaties from being broken off: she at last succeeded, by reasoning properly with the duke and duchess of Burgundy, to bring the affair again under consideration: and it was then agreed that the marriages should take place between the children of the duke of Burgundy and those of duke Albert.

This business had been delayed four or five days by an obstacle which had arisen from the council of the duke of Burgundy, who stated  
that

that duke Albert had only a reverfionary intereft in Hainault, for his elder brother William was then alive, though dangerously ill at Quefnoy, and he might furvive his brother, and if that should happen, it was clear his other brothers would have the government of Hainault, and the children of duke Albert be driven from thence. This obstacle delayed the marriages a fhort time, which was employed in proving that duke Albert had no other brother but William, and that the country of Hainault must defcend to him and to his children.

When all this was cleared up, there was not any longer delay, but the marriages were concluded and fworn to for William of Hainault to have for his wife Margaret of Burgundy, and John of Burgundy to espoufe Margaret of Hainault. They were all to return to Cambray the octave of Eaſter, in the year of grace 1385, to perform the ceremonies of the marriages.

---

#### CHAP. LXXIV.

THE KING AND THE NOBLES OF FRANCE AND HAINAULT LAY IN GREAT PROVISION OF STORES AT CAMBRAY.—THE DUKE OF LANCASTER SENDS AMBASSADORS TO THE EARL OF HAINAULT.—THE MARRIAGES OF THE CHILDREN OF BURGUNDY AND HAINAULT ARE CONCLUDED.

**T**HINGS were in this ſtate when they all left Cambray. The duke of Burgundy returned



turned to the king in France; the duchefs to Arras. Duke Albert and his duchefs went to Quefnoy in Hainault; and the duchefs of Brabant to her own country. Carpenters and mafons, and all forts of workmen, were instantly fent to prepare hôtels in the city of Cambray, and purveyors were alfo ordered thither to lay in vast quantities of provifion; it was proclaimed, that every store was to be delivered into the city the week before the octave of Easter.

When the king of France heard of this, he faid that he would be prefent at the marriages of his coufins; and commanded his maîtres d'hôtels to lay in there fuch provifion as was befitting him.

The palace of the bishop had been retained for the duke of Burgundy, and was already preparing for him; but it was neceffary to give it up to the king, and workmen were fet to embellish it in a royal manner, as it appears at this day: for never was there a feaft in the memory of man, nor for thefe laft two hundred years, that had fuch grand preparations made for it. The nobility, in order to appear with the moft pomp and magnificence, were no more fparing of their money than if it had rained gold on them: and each endeavoured to outshine the other.

Intelligence of thefe marriages was carried to England, and how the dukes of Burgundy and Albert intended uniting their children together. The duke of Lancaster (who had nourished the hope that William of Hainault would choofe

his

his daughter, at least he had so been given to understand) was penfive and melancholy at this news; in order to be better assured of it, he determined to send, as ambassadors, knights and squires of his household to Ghent, with instructions to talk with duke Albert on the subject. When they arrived at Ghent, they found there the lord Bouchier, Francis Atremen and Peter du Bois, who entertained them handsomely for two or three days. They then departed and went to Mons in Hainault; from thence to Quesnoy, where duke Albert resided and waited on him. The duke, the duchess, and their children, in honour of the duke of Lancaster received the English very politely, and the duke entertained them well, as did the lord de Gouvingen.

The master of the wool-staple of all England, being one of the envoys, delivered his credential letters, and spoke first. He strongly recommended the duke of Lancaster to his cousin duke Albert, and then began on the subjects with which he had been charged. Among other topics, as I have been informed, he asked the duke if it were his intention to persevere in the proposed union of his children with those of the duke of Burgundy. This speech moved a little the duke's choler, who replied, 'Yes, sir, by my faith do I: why do you ask?' 'My lord,' said he, 'I mention it because my lord of Lancaster has hitherto had hopes that the lady Philippa, his daughter, would have been the wife of my lord William your son.' Upon this, duke Albert said,—'My friends, tell my cousin,  
that

that when he marries any of his children, I shall never interfere: he therefore need not trouble himself about mine, nor how I marry them, nor with whom, nor when.' This was the only answer the English had from duke Albert. The master of the staple and his companions took leave of the duke after dinner and went to Valenciennes, where they lay that night: on the morrow they returned to Ghent. More of them I know not, but I believe they returned to England.

Easter was the time fixed for the king of France, the dukes of Burgundy, of Bourbon, the duke Albert with the duchess his lady, the duchesses of Burgundy and of Brabant, sir William and sir John de Namur, to be at Courtray. The king resided in the bishop's palace, and each lord and lady at their own hôtels. You may easily imagine, that where the king of France was and so many of his nobles, there would also be the flower of his knighthood.

The king arrived at Cambray on the Monday by dinner-time. All the nobles and ladies, having preceded him, went to meet him out of his city; into which he was escorted, and conducted to the palace, to the sound of numerous trumpets and minstrels. On Monday, the contracts of marriage were signed in the presence of the king and his nobles. The lord William was to possess from thenceforward the county of Ostrevant\*, and the lady Margaret

---

\* Ostrevant, or island of St. Amand. This was formerly a part of the country of Valenciennes. It lies on the borders of Flanders and Artois.—BAUDRAND.

his wife was to have the whole territory and castlewick of Arque\* in Brabant: the duke of Burgundy gave besides to his daughter one hundred thousand francs. Thus were the portions settled.

On Tuesday, at the hour of high mass, they were married, in the cathedral church of our lady in Cambray, with great solemnity, by the bishop of Cambray, whose name was John, and a native of Brussels.

There was a very magnificent dinner at the palace, to which were invited many of the great nobles. The king of France had the bridegrooms with their brides seated at his table. Several of the principal lords served the king and his guests, mounted on large war-horses. The constable and the admiral of France were seated at table. Sir Guy de la Trimouille and sir William de Namur served, with many other great barons of France.

There had not been, for five hundred years, so magnificent or renowned a solemnity seen in Cambray as was that of which I am now speaking.

After this noble and grand dinner, great numbers of lords and knights armed and made themselves ready for the tournament. It was held in the market-place, and there were forty knights. The king of France tilted with a knight from Hainault called sir Nicholas d'Espinoit.

This tournament was very handsome: the

---

\* Q. if not Ath.



tilts were well performed and lasted a considerable time: a young knight, called sir John Destrenne, from near Beaumont in Hainault, won the prize. This knight tilted to the satisfaction of the lords and ladies, and received as the prize a clasp of precious stones, which the duchess of Burgundy took from her breast; and the admiral of France and sir Guy de la Trimouille presented it to him.

These feasts and amusements continued until Friday, when they took leave of the king after dinner; and the king, the lords and the ladies departed from Courtray. The duchess of Burgundy carried with her, to Arras, Margaret of Hainault, her daughter-in-law: and madame de Hainault carried madame Margaret of Burgundy to Quesnoy. Thus ended all this business.

---

## CHAP. LXXV.

THE DUKE OF BERRY BETROTHES HIS DAUGHTER TO THE SON OF THE COUNT DE BLOIS.

—THE DUKE OF BOURBON AND THE COUNT DE LA MARCHE ISSUE THEIR SUMMONS TO INVADE LIMOUSIN.

**A**BOUT this time there was a treaty of marriage between Louis de Blois, son of the count Guy de Blois, and the lady Mary de Berry, daughter of the duke of Berry. The count de Blois carried his countess and his son Louis, well attended by lords and ladies, to  
Bourges



Bourges in Berry, where the duke and duchess were waiting for them, who received them and their company most magnificently. Every thing was there settled respecting this marriage, and the archbishop of Bourges betrothed them in the presence of a large company of nobility of both sexes. The marriage was not solemnised at that time, because both were very young; but all the contracts and engagements were signed, as to its future completion, in the presence of several great barons and knights.

There were, at this betrothing, great feasts of dinners, suppers, dancings and carollings; after which, the count and countess returned with their son to Blois. The young lady remained with the duchess her mother, at a handsome castle in Berry called Mehun sur Yevre\*.

At this time, the duke of Berry set out for Auvergne, Languedoc and Avignon, to visit pope Clement. It had been before determined that the duke de Bourbon and the count de la Marche should enter Limousin, with two thousand men at arms, to free the country from the English thieves, who were pillaging it; for there were still some castles in Poitou and Saintonge whose garrisons did much mischief; and, complaints of them having been made, the duke of Berry was desirous of providing a remedy for them.

He had therefore entreated his cousin the

---

\* Mehun sur Yevre,—four leagues from Bourges.

duke of Bourbon to undertake it, and not to quit Limoufin or Saintonge until he should have conquered the castle of Vertueil: for it was from that garrison the country had suffered the most. The duke de Bourbon accepted the command, and issued his summons for the assembling of his vassals at Moulins, in the Bourbonnois, the first day of June. From thence they marched towards Limoges, and were met by several bodies of men at arms. The duke de Bourbon had at that time for his squire an amiable gentleman called John Bonne Lance\*, master and captain of his men at arms. Of all the flower of his knights and squires, certainly this squire was well worthy of such a command.

The count de la Marche was to accompany the duke de Bourbon in this expedition, and made his preparations in the town of Tours.

---

\* Bonne Lance. I suspect this is a *nom de guerre*, for no mention is made of him under this name in the life of the duke.

## CHAP. LXXVI.

SIR JOHN DE VIENNE, ADMIRAL OF FRANCE,  
SAILS TO SCOTLAND, TO CARRY ON THE WAR  
AGAINST THE ENGLISH AT THE EXPIRATION  
OF THE TRUCE.

AT this period, those men at arms who had been fixed on to accompany sir John de Vienne, admiral of France, to Scotland, arrived at Sluys in Flanders. He was to have under his command a thousand lances, knights and squires, and, I believe, they were all there: for such was the ardour of those who wished to advance themselves, that several went with the admiral though they had not been summoned.

The fleet was ready prepared at Sluys, and the stores in great abundance and good. They embarked arms sufficient for twelve hundred men from head to foot. These they had brought from the castle of Beauté, near Paris, and they were the arms of the Parisians, which had been ordered to be deposited there. With the admiral were plenty of excellent men at arms, of the flower of knighthood. It was the intention of the admiral to give these arms to the knights and squires of Scotland, the better to succeed in their enterprise; for sir Geoffry de Charny and the others had told the king on their return home last year, that the Scots were very poorly armed.

I will

I will now name some of those lords of France who went into Scotland. First, sir John de Vienne, admiral of France, the count de Grand-pré, the lords de Verdenay, de Sainte Croix, the lord de Montbury, sir Geoffry de Charny, sir William de Vienne, sir James de Vienne, lord d'Espaigny, sir Girard de Bourbonne, the lord de Hetz, sir Florimont de Quiffy, the lord de Marnel, sir Valeran de Rayneval, the lord de Beaufang, the lord de Wainbrain, the lord de Rinolle, baron d'Yury, the lord de Coucy, sir Perceval d'Ameual, the lord de Ferrieres, the lord de Fontaines, sir Bracquet de Braquemont, the lord de Grandcourt, the lord de Landon, a Breton, sir Guy la Personne, sir William de Courroux, sir John de Hangiers, sir Bery de Vinselin, cousin to the grand master of Prussia, and many other good knights whom I cannot name: there were a thousand lances, knights and squires, without reckoning the cross-bows and sturdy varlets.

They had favourable winds and a good voyage; for the weather was very fine, as it usually is in the month of May. The truces had expired between the French and English, the Ghent men and the Flemings, and in all other parts. War was fought for, as it seemed, in every quarter; and those knights and squires who went to Scotland gallantly wished for it, as they said, with the assistance of the Scots they would make a good campaign, and carry on a successful war against England. However, the English,

English, who had received intelligence of this expedition, very much suspected whither it was bound.

---

## CHAP. LXXVII.

THE PILLAGERS OF GHENT, SURNAMED FORKERS, COMMIT MUCH MISCHIEF.—FRANCIS ATREMEN DEFEATS SOME FRENCH TROOPS NEAR ARDEMBOURG.

THE lord Bouchier, who had the government of Ghent by order of the king of England and the captains of the commonalty, Francis Atremen, Peter du Bois and Peter le Nuitre, had made every preparation, knowing the war was to be renewed. They had been very busily employed during the truce, in strengthening and victualling the town of Ghent, as well as the castle of Gauvre and all other places under their obedience.

At this period, there were a set of vagabonds who had taken refuge in the wood of la Refpaille, and had fortified themselves in a house so strongly that it could not be taken. They had been driven out of Alost, Grammont and other towns in Flanders: having wasted their all, and not knowing how to live otherwise than by plunder, they robbed and pillaged any one who fell in their way.

The



The subject of universal conversation was these Porkers of la Respaille, which wood is situated between Regnais, Grammont, Anghien, and Lyfines. They did much mischief in the castlewick of Ath, and on the lands of Floberge, Lyfines and Anghien; and these pillagers were supported by Ghent. Under their countenance they committed many murders and robberies: they entered Hainault, from whence they dragged people out of their beds, and carried them to their fort, when they ransomed them, and thus made war on all mankind.

The lord de Baudrius and de la Morte, castellan of Ath, watched them several times, but he could never catch them, for they were too well acquainted with the means of escaping. They were so much dreaded on the borders of Hainault and Brabant that none dared to travel those roads, nor through that part of the country.

The duke of Burgundy, in consequence of the renewal of the war, had reinforced the garisons of his towns and castles in Flanders with men and stores. The lord de Guistelles was commander in Bruges, and sir John de Jumont in Courtray: for sir William de Namur was at that time lord of Sluys: sir Roger de Guistelle governed Damme, and sir Peter de la Sieple Ypres. Men at arms were stationed in all the frontier towns of Flanders by order of the duke of Burgundy.

Sir Guy de Pontarlier, marshal of Burgundy,  
VOL. VI. C c remained

1









Stanford University Libraries



105 013 516 732

D  
11  
.F  
18  
v

DATE DUE

JUN 1985

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARY  
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA  
94305

